

PREFACE.

IF ever the ft y of any private man's adventures in the world were worth making public, and were acceptable when published, the Editor of this account thinks this will be fo.

The wonders of this man's life exceeded all that (he thinks) is to be found extant; the life of one man being feareely capable of a greater variety.

The ftory is told with modefly, with feriousness, and with a religious application of events to the uses to which wise men always apply them, viz. to the instruction of others by their example, and to justify and honour the wissom of Providence in all the variety of our circumstances, let them happen how they will.

The Editor believes the thing to be a just history of facts; neither is there any appearance of faction in it; and whoever thinks, because all such things are dispatched, that the improvement of it, as well to the diversion as instruction of the reader, will be the same; and as such, he thinks, without farther compliment to the world, he does them a great service in the publication.



ROBINSON CRUSOE.

OLUME THE FIRST.

I was borning the year 1632, in the city of York, or a good family, though not of that country, my father being a foreigner of Bremen, who fettled first at Hull; he got a good estate by merchandize, and leaving off his trade, lived afterwards at York, from whence he had married my mother, whose relations were named Robinson, a very good family in that country, and from whom I was called Robinson Kreutznaer; but by usual corruption of words in England, we are now called, nay, we call ourselves, and write our name Crusoe; and so my companions always called me.

I had two elder brothers, one of whom was a lieutenant colonel to an English regiment of foot in Flanders, formerly commanded by the famous Colonel Lockhart; and was killed at the battle near Dunkirk, againft the Spaniards; what became of my fecond brother I never knew, any more than my father or mother did know

what was become of me.

Being the third fon of the family, and not bred to any trade, my head began to be filled very early with rambling thoughts: my father, who was very ancient, had given me a competent thare of learning, as far as houfe-education and a country free-fehool generally go, and defigued me for the law; but I would be fatisfied with nothing but going to fea: and my inclination to this led me fo ftrongly againft the will, nay the commands, of my father, and againft all the entreaties and perfuations of my mother and other friends, that there feemed to be fomething fatal in that propension of nature, tending directly to the life of mifery which was to befal me.

My father, a wife and grave man, gave me ferious and excellent counfel against what he forestew was my design

LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF defign. He called me one morning into his chamber, where he was confined by the gout, and expostulated very warmly with me upon this fub ; he asked me what realins, more than a mere wander ag inclination, I had for leaving my father's house and i native country, where I might be well introduced, a had a prospect of raising my fortune by application and industry, with a life of ease and pleasure: he told me, it was men of desperate fortunes on one hand, or of aspiring superior fortunes on the other, and who went abroad upon adventures, to rife by enterprize, and make themselves famous in undertakings of a nature out of the common road; and these things were all either too far above me, or too far below me; that mine was the middle flate, or what might be called the upper flation of low life, which he had found, by long experience, was the best not exposed to the miseries and hardships, the labour and fufferings of the mechanic part of mankind; and not embarraffed with the pride, luxury, ambition, and envy. of the upper part of mankind. He told me I might judge of the happiness of this state, by this one thing, viz: that this was the flate of life which all other people envied; that kings have frequently lamented the miferable confequences of being born to great things, and wished they had been placed in the middle of the two extremes, between the mean and the great; that the wife man gave

when he prayed to have neither poverty nor riches. He bade me observe it, and I should always find, that the calamities of life were shared among the upper and lower part of mankind; but that the middle station had the sewest disasters, and was not exposed to so many vicissitudes as the higher or lower part of mankind; ray, they were not subjected to so many distempers and uncasinesses, either of body or mind, as those were, who, by vicious living, luxury, and extravagancies on one hand, or by hard labour, want of necessaries, and mean or insufficient dict, on the other hand, bring distempers

his testimony to this, as the just standard of true selicity,

prompting

upon themselves by the natural consequences of their way of living; the middle flation of life was calculated for all kind of virtues, and all kind of enjoyments; that Pelse and Plenty were the handmaids of a middle fortune that temperance, moderation, quietnels, health tociety all agreeable diversions, and all definable pleafures, we've the bleffings attending the middle ftation of life; that this way men went filently and smoothly through the world, and comfortably out of it; not embarraffed with the labours of the hands, or of the head; not fold to a life of flavery for daily bread, or harraffed with perplexed circumstances, which rob the foul of peace, and the body of reit; not enraged with the passion of envy, or the fecret burning luft of ambition for great things; but in eafy circumstances, sliding gently through the world, and fenfibly taffing the fweets of living, without the bitter; feeling that they are happy, and learning by every day's experience to know it more fenfibly.

After this, he pressed me earnestly, and in the most affectionate manner, not to play the young man, or to precipitate myfelf into miferies, which nature, and the station of life I was born in feemed to have provided against; that I was under no necessity of seeking my bread; that he would do well for me, and endeavour to enter me fairly into the fiation of life which he had been just recommending to me; and that if I was not very eafy and happy in the world, it must be my mere fate or fault that must binder it; and that he should have nothing to answer for, having thus discharged his duty, in warning me against measures which he knew would be to my hurt: in a word, that as he would do very kind things for me, if I would flay and fettle at home, as he directed; fo he would not have fo much hand in my misfortunes, as to give me any encouragement to go away : and to close all, he told me, I had my elder brother for an example, to whom he had used the same earnest perfusions, to keep him from going into the Low Country wars, but could not prevail, his young defires

prempting him to run into the army, where he was feilled; and though, he faid, he would not cease to pray for me, yet he would venture to fay the ne, that if I did take this foolish step, Godwould not bled me; and I would have lessure to reflect upon have a neglected his counsel, when there might benone to offsit) my recovery.

I observed in this last part of his discourse, which was truly prophetic, though I suppose my father did not know it to be so himself; I say I observed the tears run down his sace very plentifully, especially when he spoke of my brother who was killed; and that when he spoke of my having leifure to repent, and none to affist me, he was so moved, that he broke off the discourse, and told me

his heart was fo full he could fay no more to me.

I was fincerely afflicted with this difcourfe, as indeed who could be otherwise; and I resolved not to think of going abroad any more, but to fettle at home, according to my father's defice: but, alas! a few days wore it all off; and, in short, to prevent any of my father's farther importunities, in a few weeks after, I refolved to run quite away from him. However, I did not act fo haltily neither, as the first heat of my refolution prompted; but I took my mother at a time when I thought her a little pleafanter than ordinary; and told her, that my thoughts were fo entirely bent upon feeing the world, that I should never fettle to any thing with resolution enough to go through with it; and my father had better give me his confent, than force me to go without it; that I was now eighteen years old, which was too late to go apprentice to a trade, or clerk to an attorney; that I was fure, if I did, I should never ferve out my time, but I should certainly run away from my master before my time was out, and go to fea; and if the would speak to my father to let me go one voyage abroad, if I came home again, and did not like it, I would go no more, and I would promife, by a double diligence to recover the time I had loft.

This put my mother into a great passion: she told me, she knew it would be to no purpose to speak to my

father

father upon any fuch fubject; that he knew too well what was my interest, to give his conient to any thing fo much for my burt; and that she wondered how I could think of a struct thing, after the discourse I had had with my ther, and such kind and tender expressions as the knew my sather had used to me: and that, in short, if I would ruin myself, there was no help for me; but I might depend I should never have their consent to it; that, for her part, she would not have so much hand in my destruction; and I should never have it to say, that my mother was willing, when my father was not.

Though my mother refused to move it to my father, yet I heard afterwards, that she reported all the discourse to him: and that my father, after shewing a great concern at it, faid to her, with a figh—' That boy might be liappy, if he would stay at home; but if he goes abroad, he will be the most miserable wretch that ever

" was born! I can give no confent to it."

It was not till almost a year after this that I broke loofe, though in the mean time I continued obstinately deaf to all proposals of fettling to business, and frequently expostulated with my father and mother, about their being to politively determined against what they knew my inclinations prompted me to. But being one day at Hull, whither I went cafually, and without any pur-, pose of making an elopement at that time; I say being there, and one of my companions being going by fea to London, in his father's thip, and prompting me to go with them, with the common allurement of a feafaring man, that it should cost me nothing for my passage; I confulted neither father or mother any more, nor lo much as fent them word of it; but leaving them to hear of it as they might, without asking God's bleffing or my father's; without any confideration of circumstances or consequences, and in an ill-hour, (God knows) on the first of September, 1651, I went on board a thip bound for London. Never any young adventurer's misfortunes, I believe, began fooner, or continued longer, than mine: the ship

was no fooner got out of the Humber, but the wind began to blow, and the fea to rife in a most frightful manner; and as I had never been at fea before, I was most inexpressibly sick in body, and terrifict in mind. I began now seriously to reslect upon when I had done, and how justly I was overtaken by the judgment of Heaven, for so my wickedly leaving my father's houte, and abandoning my duty; all the good counsel of my parents, my father's tears, and my mother's entreaties, came now fresh into my mind; and my conscience, which was not yet come to the pitch of hardness to which it has been since, repreached me with the contempt of advice, and the breach of my duty to God and

my father.

All this while the storm encreased, and the sea ran very high, though nothing like what I have feen many times fince; no, nor what I faw a few days after; but it was enough to affect me then, who was but a young failor, and had never known any thing of the matter. expected every wave would have fwallowed us up, and that every time the ship fell down, as I thought it did, in the trough or hollow of the fea, we should never rife more. In this arony of mind I made many vows and refolutions, that if it would pleafe God to spare my life in this one voyage, if ever I got once my foot upon dry land again, I would go directly home to my father, and never fer it into a ship again while I lived; that I would takehis advice, and never run myfelf into fuch miferies as these any more. Now I saw plainly the goodness of his observations about the middle station of life, how eafy, how comfortable he had lived all his days, and never had been exposed to tempests at sea, or trouble on shore; and, in short, I resolved that I would, like a true repenting prodigal, go home to my father.

These wise and sober thoughts continued all the while the storm lasted, and indeed sometime after; but the next day the wind was abated, and the sea calmer; and I began to be a little inured to it. However, I was very grave for all that day, being also a little sea lick

ftill;

fill; but towards night the weather cleared up, the wind was quite over, and a charming fine evening followed; the fun weat down perfectly clear, and rofe to the next morning, and having little or no wind, and a finooth fea, the fun thining upon it, the fight was, as I

thought, the most delightful I ever faw.

I had flept well in the night, and was now no more fea-fick, but very cheerful; looking with wonder upon the fea, that was fo rough and terrible the day before, and could be so calin, and so pleasant, in so little a time after: and now, left my good refolutions should continue, my companion, who had, indeed, enticed me away, came to me- Well, Bob,' fays he,' clapping me upon the shoulder, ' how do you do after it? I warrant ' you were frighted, were not you last night, when it blew but a cap full of wind?'- A cap full d'ye call 'it!' faid I, it was a terrible from.'- A from, you ' fool, you!' replies he, ' do you call that a fform? Why, it was nothing at all. Give us but a good ship, ' and fea room, and we think nothing of fuch a fquall of wind as that; but, your but a fresh-water failor, Bob; come, let us make a bowl of punch, and we'll ' forget all that. D'ye fee what charming weather 'tis ' now?' To make short this sad part of my story, we went the way of all failors; the punch was made, and I was made half drunk with it, and in that one night's wickedness I drowned all my repentance, all my reflections on my past conduct, and all my resolutions for the future. In a word, as the fea was returned to its fmoothness of furface, and settled calmness, by the abatement of that fform, fo the hurry of my thoughts being over, my fears and apprehentions of being fwallowed up by the fea, being forgotten, and the current of my former defires returned, I entirely forgot the vows and promifes I made in my diffress. I found, indeed, fome intervals of reflection, and the ferious thoughts did, as it were, endeavour to return again fometimes; but I shook them off, and rouzed myfelf from them, as it were from a diffemper; and applying myfelf

myfelf to drinking and company, foon maftered the return of thole ats, (for fo I called them;) and I had, in five or fix days, got as complete a victory over my confcience, as any young fellow that refolved not to be troubled with it could define: But I was to have another trial for it ftill; and Providence, as in fuch cases generally happens, refolved to leave me entirely without excule; for if I would not take this for a deliverance, the next was to be fuch a one, as the world and moft hardened wretch among us would confess both the danger and the mercy.

The fixth day of our being at fea we came into Yarmouth roads; the wind having been contrary; and the weather calm, we had made but little way fince the florm. Here we were obliged to come to an anchor, and here we lay, the wind continuing contrary, viz. at S. W. for feven or eight days; during which time, a great many fhips from Newcassle came into the same roads; as the common harbour where the ships might

wait for a wind for the river.

We had not, however, rid here fo long but we should have tided it up the river, had not the wind blew too fresh; and, after we had lain four or five days, blew very hard. However, the roads being reckoned as good as an harbour, the anchorage good, and our ground tackle very frong, our men were unconcerned, and not in the least apprehensive of danger; but spent the time in rest and mirth, after the manner of the sea; but the eighth day in the morning, the wind increased, and we had all hands to work to firike our top-mafts, and make every thing fnug and close, that the ship might ride as easy as possible. By noon the sea ran very high indeed, and our ship rid forecastle-in, shipped several feas, and we thought once or twice our anchor had come home: upon which our mafter ordered out the sheet anchor; so that we rode with two anchors a-head, and the cables veered out to the better end.

By this time it blew a terrible from indeed; and now I began to fee terror and amazement in the faces even of the framen themselves. The master, though vigilant

in the bufiness of preferving the ship, yet as he went in and out of his cabin by me, I could hear him, loftly to himself, say several times- Lord be merciful to us! " we fhall be all loft, we shall be all undone!" and the like. During these first hurries I was stupid, lying still in my cabin, which was in the steerage, and cannot defcribe my temper. I could ill refume the first penitence which I had fo apparently trampled upon, and hardened myself against: I thought the bitterness of death had heen passed; and that this would be nothing, too, like the first. But when the master himself came by me, as I faid just now, and faid we should be all lost. I was dreadfully frighted. I got up out of my cabin, and looked out: but fuch a difinal fight I never faw; the lea went mountains high, and broke upon us every three or four minutes. When I could look about, I could fee nothing but diffress round us; two ships that rid near us, we found, had cut their maits by the board, being deep laden; and our men cried out, that a ship which rid about a mile a head of us was foundered. Two more ships, being driven from their anchors, were run out of the roads to fea, at all adventures, and that not with a mast standing. The light ships fared the belt, as not so much labouring in the sea; but two or three of them drove, and came close by us, running away with only their fprit-fail out before the wind.

Towards the evening, the mate and boatswain begged the mafter of our ship to let them cut away the foremast, which he was very unwilling to do: but the boat-Swain protesting to him, that if he did not, the ship would founder, he confented; and when they had cut away the foremast, the main-mast stood so loose, and shook the ship so much, they were obliged to cut her

away also, and make a clear deck.

Any one may judge what a condition I must be in at all this, who was but a young failor, and who had been in such a fright before at but a little. But if I can express at this distance the thoughts I had about me at that time, I was in ten-fold more horror of mind upon account

account of my former convictions, and the having returned from them to the refolutions I had wickedly taken at first, than I was at death itself; and these, added to the terror of the storm, put me into such a condition, that I can by no words describe it. But the worst was not come yet; the ftorm continued with fuch fury, that the feamen themselves acknowledged they had never feen a worfe. We had a good ship, but she was deep laden, and wallowed in the fea, that the feamen every now and then cried out the would founder. It was my advantage in one respect, that I did not know what they meant by founder, till I enquired. However, the from was so violent, that I saw what is not often seen, the mafter, the boatfwain, and fome others more fenfible than the reft, at their prayers, and expecting every moment the ship would go to the bottom. In the middle of the night, and under all the rest of our distresses, one of the men that had been down on purpose to see, cried out we had fprung a leak; another laid, there was four feet water in the hold. Then all hands were called to the pump. At that very word my heart, as I thought, died within me; and I fell backwards upon the fide of my bed where I fat, into the cabin. However, the men rouzed me, and told me, that I that was able to do nothing before, was as well able to pump as another; at which I stirred up, and went to the pump, and worked very heartily. While this was doing, the mafter feeing fome light colliers, who, not able to ride out the ftorm, were obliged to flip and run away to the fea, and would come near us, ordered to fire a gun as 2 fignal of diffrefs. I, who knew nothing what they meant, was fo furprized, that I thought the ship had broke, or fome dreadful thing happened; in a word, I was so furprised, that I fell down in a swoon. As this was a time when every body had his own life to think of, nobody minded me, or what was become of me; but another man stepped up to the pump, and, thrusting met aside with his foot, let me lie, thinking I had beed dead; and it was a great while before I came to myfelf.

We worked on, but the water increasing in the hold, it was apparent that the flip would founder; and though the form began to abate a little, yet as it was not possible she could swim till we might run into any port, so the master continued firing guns for help; and a light ship, who had rid it out just a head of us, ventured a boat out to help us. It was with the utmost hazard the boat came near us; but it was impossible for us to get on board, or for the boat to lie near the fhip's fide, till at last the men rowing very heartily, and venturing their lives to fave ours, our men cast them a rope over the fern with a buoy to it, and then veered it out a great length, which they, after much labour and hazard, took hold of, and we hauled them close under our stern, and got all into their boat. It was to no purpose for them or us, after we were in the boat, to think of reaching to their own ship; so all agreed to let her drive, and only to pull her in towards there as much as we could; and our master promised them, that if the boat was staved upon shore, he would make it good to their master: to partly rowing, and partly driving, our boat went away to the northward, floping towards the fhore, almost as far as Wintertonnesse.

We were not much more than a quarter of an hour out of our fhip, but we faw her fink; and then I understood, for the first time, what was meant by a thip foundering in the fea. I must acknowledge I had hardly eyes to look up, when the feamen told me she was sinking; for, from that moment they rather put me into the boat, than that I might be faid to go in, my heart was as it were dead within me; partly with fright, partly with horror of mind, and

the thoughts of what was yet before me.

While we were in this condition, the men yet labouring at the oar to bring the boat near the shore, we could fee (when our boat mounting the waves, we were able to fee the fhore) a great many people running along the strand to assist us when we should come near: but we made but flow way towards the

fhore: nor were we able to reach the fhore, till being part the light-house at Winterton, the shore falls off to the westward towards Cromer; and so the land broke off a little the violence of the wind. Here we got in, and though not without much difficulty, got all fafe on shore, and walked afterwards on foot to Yarmouth; where, as unfortunate men, we were used with great humanity, as well by the magistrates of the town, who affigned us good quarters, as by particular merchants and owners of thips, and had money given us sufficient to carry us either to London, or back to Hull, as we thought fit.

Had I now had the fense to have gone back to Hull, and have gone home, I had been happy, and my father, an emblem of our Bleffed Saviour's parable, had even killed the fatted calf for me; for, hearing the ship I went away in, was cast away in Yarmouth Road, it was a great while before he had any affurances

that I was not drowned.

But my ill-fate pushed me on now, with an obstinacy that nothing could relift; and though I had feveral times loud calls from my reason and my more composed judgment, to go home, yet I had no power to do it; I know not what to call this; nor will I urge, that it is a fecret-over-ruling decree that hurries us on to be the infiruments of our own destruction, even though it be before us, and that we push upon it with our eyes open. Certainly, nothing but some such decreed unavoidable mifery attending, and which it was impossible for me to escape, could have pushed me forward against the calm reasonings and persuasions of my most retired thoughts, and against two such visible instructions as I had met with in my first attempt.

My comrade, who had helped to harden me before, and who was the mafter's fon, was now less forward than I. The first time he spoke to me after we were at Yarmouth, which was not till two or three days, for we were feparated in the town to feveral quarters; I fay, the first time he saw me, it appeared his tone was altered;

and, looking very melancholy, and fhaking his head, asked me how I did; and telling his father who I was, and how I had come this voyage only for a trial, in order to go farther abroad; his father turning to me with a very grave and concerned tone, "Young man," fays he, " you ought never to go to fea any more; you ought " to take this for a plain and visible token, that you are " not to be a feafaring man."-" Why, Sir," faid I; " will you go to fea no more?" -" That is another " case," faid he; "it is my calling, and therefore my " duty; but as you made this voyage for a trial, you " see what a taste Heaven has given you of what you " are to expect, if you perfift; perhaps all this has be. " fallen us on your account, like Jonah in the ship of " Tarshish. Pray," continues he, what are you? and " on what account did you go to fea?" Upon that I told him forne of my flory; at the end of which, he burft out with a firange kind of passion. "What had I "done," fays he, "that fuch an unhappy wretch " should come into my ship! I would not set my foot " in the same ship with thee again for a thousand pounds." This indeed was, as I faid, an excursion of his spirits, which were yet agitated by the fense of his loss, and was farther than he could have authority to go: however, he afterwards talked very gravely to me, exhorting me to go back to my father, and not tempt Provividence to my ruin; told me I might fee a vilible hand of Heaven against me: "And young man," faid he, " depend upon it, if you do not go back, wherever you " go, you will meet with nothing but difafters and " difappointments, till your father's words are fulfilled upon you."

We parted foon after; for I made him little answer, and I saw him no more; which way he went, I know not. As for me, having some money in my pocket, I travelled to London, by land; and there, as well as on the road, had many fruggles with myself, what course of life! should take, and whether I should go home, or go

to fea

As to going home, shame opposed the best motions that offered to my thoughts; and it immediately occurred to me how I should be laughed at among the neighbours, and should be assumed to see, not my father and mother only, but even every body else. From whence I have since often observed how incongruous and irrational the common temper of mankind is, especially of youth, to that reason that ought to guide them in such cases; viz. that they are not assumed to fin, and yet are assumed to repent; not assumed of the action, for which they ought juilly to be essemble fools: but are assumed of the returning, which only can make them essemed wife men.

In this flate of life, however, I remained some time, uncertain what measures to take, and what course of life to lead. An irresitable reluctance continued to going home; and as I stail awhile, the remembrance of the distress I had been in, wore off; and as that abated, the little motion I had in my defires to return, wore off with it, till at last I quite laid aside the thoughts of it,

and looked out for a voyage.

That evil influence which carried me first away from my father's house, which hurried me into the wild and indigested notion of raising my fortune, and that impressed those conceits so forcibly upon me as to make me deaf to all good advice, and to the entreaties, and even the commands of my father; I say, the same influence, whatever it was, presented the most uniotunate of all enterprizes to my view; and I went on board a vessel bound to the coast of Africa, or, as our failors vulgarly call it, a voyage to Guinea.

It was my great misfortune, that in all these adventures I did not ship myself as a failor; whereby, though I might indeed have worked a little harder than ordinary, yet, at the fame time, I had learned the duty and office of a fore-mass. and in time might have qualified myself for a mate or lieutenant, if not for a master. But as it was always my fate to chuse for the wors, to I did here; for having money in my pocket, and good cloaths on my back, I would always go on board in the habit of a gentleman; and to I neither had any buil-

It was my lot first of all to fall into pretty good company in London, which does not always happen to fuch loofe and unguided young fellows as I then was; the devil generally not omitting to lay fome frare for them very early; but it was not to with me. I first became acquainted with the mafter of a fhip who had been on the Coast of Cruinea, and who, having had very good fuccels there, was refolved to go again: this captain, taking a lancy to my convertation, which was not difagreeable at that time, and hearing me fay I had a mind to fee the world, told me, if I would go the voyage with him, I should be at no expense; I should be his messniate, and his companion; and if I could carry any thing with me, I should have all the advantage of it that the trade would admit; and perhaps I might meet with feme encouragement.

I embraced the offer; and entering into a frict friend-flup with this captain, who was an honeit plain-dealing man, went the voyage with him, and carried a fmall adventure with me, which, by the difinterested honesty of my friend the captain, I increased very considerably; for I carried about 40st. in such toys and trisles as the captain directed me to buy. This 40st. I had mustered together, by the affishence of some of my relations whom I corresponded with, and who, I believe, got my father, or at least my mother, to contribute so much as that to

my first a leenture

This was the only voyage which I may fay was fuccessful in all my adventures, and which I owe to the integrity and honesty of my friend the captain; under whom I got a competent knowledge of the mathematics, and the rules of navigation: learned how to keep an account of the ship's course, take an observation, and, in short, to understand some things that were needful to be understood by a failor: for, as he took delight to introduce me, I took delight to learn: and, in a word, this voyage made me both a shilor and a merchant; for

20

brought home five hundred pounds nine ounces of gold-duft for my adventure, which yielded me in London, at my return, almost 300l. and this filled me with those aspiring thoughts which have fince so compleated my ruin.

Yet, even in this voyage, I had misfortunes too; particularly, that I was continually fick, being thrown into a violent calenture by the exceffive heat of the climate; our principal trading being upon the coaft, from the lat.

of 15 deg. N. even to the line itself.

I was now fet up for a Guinea trader; and my friend, to my great misfortune, dying foon after his arrival, I refolved to go the fame voyage again; and I embarked in the fame veffel with one who was his mate in the former voyage, and had now got the command of the ship. This was the unhappied voyage that ever man made; for though I did not carry quite rook of my new-gained wealth, fo that I had 2001. left, and which I lodged with my friend's widow, who was very just to me, yet I fell into terrible misfortunes in this voyage; and the first was this: viz. our fhip making her courle towards the Canary Mands, or rather between those Islands and the African there, was furprized in the grey of the morning by a Moorish rover of Sallee, who gave chace to us with all the fail she could make. We crouded also as much canvas as our yards would fpread, or our mafts carry, to have got clear; but finding the pirate gained upon us, and would certainly come up with us in a few hours, we prepared to fight; our ship having twelve guns, and the rover eighteen. About three in the afternoon he came up with us, and, bringing to, by mistake, just athwart our quarter, instead of athwart our stern, as he intended, we brought eight of our guns to bear on that fide, and poured in a broadfide upon him, which made him theer off again, after returning our fire, and pouring in also his finall that from near 200 men which he had on board. However, we had not a man touched, all our men keeping close. He prepared to attack us again, and we to defend ourselves; but laying us on board the next time upon our other quarter, he entered

ninety

ninety men upon our decks, who immediately fell to cutting and hacking the decks and rigging. We plied them with small-floot, half-pikes, powder-chefts, and fuch like, and cleared our deck of them twice. However, to cut short this melancholy part of our story, our ship being disabled, and three of our men killed, and eight wounded, we were obliged to yield; and were carried all prisoners into Sallee, a port belonging to the Moors.

The mage I had there was not fo dreadful as at first I apprehended; nor was I carried up the country, to the emperor's court, as the rest of our men were, but was kept by the captain of the rover, as his proper prize, and made his slave, being young and nimble, and fit for his business. At this jurprising change of my circumstances, from a merchant to a miterable slave, I was perfectly overwhelmed; and now I looked back upon my father's prochetic discourse to me, that I should be miserable, and have none to relieve me; which I thought was now so effectually brought to pass, that I could not be worse; that now the hand of Heaven had overtaken me, and I was underne without redeemption. But, also! this was but a tage of the unitery I was to go through, as will appear to the frequel of this story.

As my new pation or matter had taken me home to his house, fo I was in hopes, that he would take me with him when he went to lea again, believing that it would be force time or other his fate to be taken by a Spanish or Pertugal man of war; and that then I should be fet at liberty. But this hope of mine was foon taken away: for when he went to tak he left me on thore to look after his little garden, and do the drudgery of slaves about his house; and when he came home again from his cruize, he ordered me to he in the cabin, to look

after the thin

Here I meditated nothing but my escape, and what method I might take to effect it; but sound no way that had the least probability in it: nothing presented to make the supposition of it rational; for I had nobedy to commu-

communicate it to, that would embark with me; no fellow-flave, no Englishman, Irishman or Scotchman there, but myself; fo that for two years, though I often pleased myself with the imagination, yet I never had the least encouraging prospect of putting it in practice.

After about two years, an odd circumstance presented itself, which put the old thoughts of making some attempt for my liberty again in my head; my patron lying at home longer than usual, without fitting out his ship, which, as I heard, was for want of money, he used constantly, once of twice a week, sometimes oftener, if the weather was fair, to take the ship's pinnace, and go out into the road a stifning; and as he always took me and a young Moreso with him to row the boat, we made him very merry, and I proved very dexterous in catching fish; insomuch, that sometimes he would fend me with a Moor, one of his kinsmen, and the youth the Moresco, as they called him, to catch a dish of fish for him.

It happened one time, that going a fishing with him in a calm morning, a fog role to thick, that though we were not half a league from the shore, we lost fight of it; and, rowing we knew not whither, or which way, we laboured all day, and all the next night; and when the morning came, we found we had pulled off to sea, instead of pulling in for the shore, and that we were at least two leagues from the land; however, we got well in again, though with a great deal of labour, and some danger, for the wind began to blow pretty fresh in the morning; but, particularly we were all very hungry.

But our patron, warned by this difafter, reloved to take more care of himfelf for the future; and having lying by him the long-boat of our English ship which he had taken, he resolved he would not go a fishing any more without a compass and some provision; so he ordered the carpenter of his ship, who was also an English slave, to build a little state-room or cabin in the middle of the long-boat, like that of a barge, with a place to stand behind it to steer, and haul home the main sheet;

and

and room before for an hand or two to fland and work the fails. She failed with what we call a fhoulder-of-mutton fail; and the boom jibbed over the tep of the cabin, which lay very fing and low, and had in it room for him to lie, with a flave or two, and a table to eat on, with fome finall lockers to put in fome bottles of fuch liquor as he thought fit to drink; particularly his bread, rice, and coffee.

We went frequently out with this boat a fifting; and as I was most dexterous to catch fish for him, he never went without me. It happened one day, that he had appointed to go out in this boat, either for pleasure or for fish, with two or three Moors of some distinction, and for whom he had provided extraordinarily; and had therefore sent on board the boat overnight a larger store of provisions than usual; and had ordered me to get ready three fulls with powder and shot, which were on board his ship; for that they designed some sport of sowling, as well as fishing.

I got all things ready, as he had directed; and waited the next morning with the boat we fled clean, her ancient and pendants on, and every thing to accommodate his gueffs, when by and by my patron came on board alone, and told me his gueffs had put off going, upon fome bufines that fell out; and ordered me, with the man and boy, as usual, to go out with the boat, and catch them some fish, for that his friends were to sup at his house; he commanded me too, that as soon as I had got some fish, I should bring it home to his house; all which I prepared

to do.

This mement my former notions of deliverance darted into my thoughts; for now I found I was likely to have a little fhip at my command; and my maker being gone, I prepared to furnish myfelf, not for fishing business, but for a voyage; though I knew not, neither did I so much as consider, whither I would steer; for any where to get out of that place was my way.

My first contrivence was to make a pretence to speak to this Moor, to get something for our subdistence on 24

board; for I told him we must not prefume to eat of our a large balket of ratk, or bilduit of their kind, and three patron's cafe of bottles food, which it was evident by the make, were taken out of fome English prize, and I conveyed them into the boat, while the Moor was on fhore, as if they had been there before for our mader: I conveyed also a great lump of bees-wax into the boat which weighed about half an hundred weight, with a parcel of twine or thread, an hatchet, a faw, and an hammer, all which were of great use to us afterwards, especially the wax to make candles. Another trick I tried upon him, which he innocently came into also; his name was Ifmael, whom they call Muley, or Moloy; fo I called to him. "Moloy," faid I, "our patron's " guns are all on board the boat : can you not get a life-" tle powder and that? It may be we may kill for " aleamies (a fowl like our curlews) for our felves; fe "I know he keeps the gunner's flores in the fhip."-"Yes," fays he, "I'll bring fome." Accordingly he brought a great leather pouch, which held about pound and a half of powder, or rather more; and anbther with shot, that had five or fix pounds, with some bullets, and put all into the boat: at the same time I had found fome powder of my mafter's, in the great cabin, with which I filled one of the large bottles in the case, which was almost empty; pouring what was in it into another; and thus furnished with every thing needful, we failed out of the port to fish. The caste, which was at the entrance of the port, knew who we were, and took no notice of us; and we were not above a mile out of the port, before we hauled in our fail, and fat us down to fish. The wind blew from the N. N. E. which was contrary to my clire; for had it blown foutherly, I had been fure to have made the coast of Spain, and at least reached to the Bay of Cadiz; but my relolutions were, blow which way it would, I would be gone from that horrid place where I was, and leave the relt to fate.

After we had fished fome time, and catched nothing, (for when I had fifth on my hook, I would not pull them up, that he might not fee them) I faid to the Moor-"This will not do; our mafter will not be thus ferved; we must stand farther off." He, thinking no harm, agreed; and being in the head of the boat, fet the fails; and as I had the helm, I ran the boat out near a league farther, and then brought her to, as if I would fish; when, giving the boy the helm, I stepped forward to where the Moor was; and, making as if I stooped for tomething behind him, I took him by furprize with my arm under his twift, and toffed him clear over-board into the fea: he role immediately, for he swam like a cork, and called to me, begging to be taken in, and told me he would go all over the world with me: he fwam fo firong after the boat, that he would have reached me very quickly, there being but little wind: upon which I stepped into the cabin, and fetching one of the fowlingpieces, I presented it at him, and told him, I had done him no hurt, and, if he would be quiet, I would do him none: "But," faid I, " you fwim well enough to reach " the shore, and the sea is calm: make the best of your " way to the shore, and I will do you no harm: but if " you come near the boat, I will thoot you through the " head: for I am refole d to have my liberty." So he turned himself about, and swam for the shore: and I make no doubt but he reached it with eafe, for he was an excellent (wimmer.

I could have been content to have taken this Moor with me, and have drowned the boy; but there was no venturing to trust him: when he was gone, I turned to the boy, whom they called Xury, and faid to him—
'Xury, if you will be faithful to me, I will make you a great man; but if you will not stroke your face to be true to me, that is, iw r by Mahomet and his father's beard, I must throw you into the sea too.' The boy similed in my sace, and spoke so innocently, that I could not mistrust him; and swore to be faithful to me, and go all over the world with me.

D

While I was in the view of the Moor that was swimming. I flood out directly to sea, with the boat rathe stretching to windward, that they might think me goat towards the Streights Mouth, (as indeed any one that had been in their wits must have been supposed to do a for who would have supposed we were sailed on to the fouthward, to the truly Barbarian coast, where whole nations of Negroes were fare to surround us with the canoes, and defroy us; where we could never once go of shore, but we should be devoured by savage beasts, or more merciless tavages of human kind.

But as foon as it grew dufk in the evening I changed my courie, and fleered directly S. and by E. bending my courie a little towards the E. that I might keep m with the floore: and having a fair fresh gale of wind, and a smooth quiet sea, I made such sail, that I believe by the next day at three o'clock in the afternoon, when I first made the land, I could not be less than 150 miles fouth of Sallee, quite beyond the Emperor of Morocco's dominions, or indeed of any other king thereabouts, for

we faw no people.

Yet fuch was the fright I had taken at the Moors, and the dreadful apprehensions I had of falling into their hands, that I would not stop or go on shore, or come to an anchor, (the wind continuing fair) till I had sailed in that manner sive days; and then the wind shifting to the fouthward, I concluded also, that if any of our vessels were in chase of me, they also would now give over; so I ventured to make to the coast, and came to an anchor in the mouth of a little river. I knew not what or where; neither what latitude, what country, what nation, or what river; I neither saw, or defined to see, any people; the principal thing I wanted was fresh water. We came into this creek in the evening, resolving to swim on shore as soon as it was dark, and discove the country; but as soon as it was quite dark, we heard such dreadful nosses of the banking, roaring, and howling of wild creatures, of we knew not what kinds, that the poor boy was ready to die with sea, and begged of me

not to go on fhore till day. 'Well, Xury,' faid I, 'then I won't; but it may be we may fee men by day, 'who will be as bad to us as those lions.'—'Then we may give them the fhoot gun,' fays Xury, laughing, 'make them run way;' fuch English Xury spoke by convering among us slaves. However, I was glad to see the boy so chearful, and I gave him a dram out of our patron's case of bottles, to chear him up: after all, Xury's advice was good, and I took it; we dropped our little anchor, and lay full all night; I fay, lay still, for we slept none; for in two or three hours we saw valit great creatures, we knew not what to call them, of many lorts, come to the sea shore, and run into the water, wallowing and washing themselves, for the pleasure of cooling themselves; and they made such hideous howlings and yellings, that I never indeed heard the like.

Xury was dreadfully frighted, and indeed to was I too: but we were both worte frighted when we heard one mighty creature come twimming towards our boar; we could not fee him, but we might hear him by his blowing, to be a monifrous, luge, and furious beat. Yury faid it was a lion, and it might be for ought I know; poor Xury cried out to me to weigh the anchor, and row away. 'No,' fays I, 'Xury, we can flip our 'cable with a buoy to it, and go to fea; they cannot follow us far.' I had no fooner faid fo, but I perceived the creature (whatever it was) within two oars length, which fomething furprifed me; however, I immediately flepped to the cabin door, and taking up my gun fired at him; upon which he immediately turned about, and

fwam towards the shore again.

But it was not possible to describe the horrid noises, and hideous cries and howlings, that were raised, as well upon the edge of the shore, as higher within the country, upon the noise or report of a gun, a thing I have some reason to believe those creatures had never heard before. This convinced me, that there was no going on shore for us in the night upon that coast; and how to venture on shore in the day was another question too; for, to have

fallen into the hands of any of the favages had been as bad as to have fallen into the paws of lions and tygers; at leaft, we were equally apprehensive of the danger of it.

it.

Be that as it would, we were obliged to go on shore fomewhere or other for water, for we had not a pint left in the boat; when or where to get to it was the point: Xury faid, if I would let him go on shore with one of the jars, he would find if there was any water, and bring fome to me. I asked him, why he would go: why I should not go, and he stay in the boat. The boy answered with so much affection, that he made me love him ever after: fays he, ' If wild mans come, they eat me, you go away,'- Well, Xury,' faid I; we will both go, and if the wild mans come, we will ' kill them; they shall eat neither of us.' So I gave Xury a piece of rulk-bread to eat, and a dram out of our patron's cafe of bottles, which I mentioned before, and we hauled the boat in as near shore as we thought was proper, and waded on fhore, carrying nothing but our arms and two jars for water.

I did not care to go out of fight of the boat, fearing the coming of the canoes with favages down the river; but the boy feeing a low place, about a mile up the country, rambled to it, and by and by I faw him come running towards me: I thought he was purited by fone favage, or frighted with fome wild beaft, and I ran forwards, towards him, to help him: but when I came nearer to him, I faw fornething hanging over his flioulders, which was a creature that he had fhot, like a hare, but different in colour, and longer legs; however, we were very glad of it, and it was very good meat; but the great joy that poor Xury came with, was to tell me he had found good water, and feen no wild mans.

Eut we found afterwards, that we need not take such pains for water; for a little higher up the creek where were, we found the water fresh when the tide was out, which slows but a little way up; so we filled our jars, and feasted on the hare we had killed, and prepared

to

to go on our way, having feen no footsteps of any human

creature in that part of the country.

As I had been one voyage to this coast before, I knew very well, that the islands of the Canaries, and the Cape de Verd islands also, lay not far off from the coast: but as I had no infruments to take an observation, to know what latitude we were in, and did not exactly know, or at least remember, what latitude they were in, I knew not where to look for them, or when to frand off to sea towards them, otherwise I might now easily have found some of these islands. But my hope was, that if I stood along this coast till I came to that part where the English traded, I should find some of their vessels upon their usual design of trade, that would relieve and take us in.

By the beft of my calculation, the place where I now was must be that country, which, lying between the Emperor of Morocco's dominions and the Negroes, lies waste and uninhabited, except by wild beafts; the negroes having abandoned it, and gone farther fouth for fear of the Moors; and the Moors not thinking it worth inhabiting, by reason of its barrennes; and, indeed, both foriaking it, because of the prodigious number of tygers, lions, leopards, and other surface reasures which harbour there; to that the Moors use it for their hunting only, where they go like an army, two or three thousand men at a time; and, indeed, for near an hundred miles together upon this coast, we saw nothing but a waste uninhabited country by day, and heard nothing but howlings and roarings of wild beafts by night.

Once or twice, in the day time, I thought I faw the Pico of Teneriffe, being the high top of the mountain Teneriffe, in the Canaries; and had a great mind to venture out, in hopes of reaching thither; but having tried twice, I was forced in again by contrary winds, the sea also going too high for my little vessel; is I resolved to pursue my first design, and keep along the

thore

Several times we were obliged to land for fresh-water, after we had left this place; and once in particular, being

early in the morning, we came to an anchor under a little point of land, which was pretty high; and the tide beginning to flow, we lay still to go farther in. Xury, whose eyes were more about him than it seems mine were, calls foftly to me, and tells me, that we had best go farther off the flore; 'For,' fays he, 'look! yonderlies a dreadful monfter on the fide of that hillock, fast affeep. I looked where he pointed, and faw a dreadful monfter indeed! for it was a terrible great lion, that lay on the fide of the shore, under the shade of a piece of the hill, ' you shall go on shore and kill him.' Xury looked frighted, and faid- 'Me kill! he eat me at one mouth;' one mouthful, he meant: however, I faid no more to the boy, but bade him be ftill, and took our biggeft gun, which was almost mulquet bore, and loaded it with a good charge of powder, and with two flugs, and laid it down; then I loaded another gun with two bullets, and the third (for we had three pieces) I loaded with five fmaller bullets. I took the best aim I could with the first piece to have shot him in the head; but he lay so with his leg raifed a little above his noie, that the flug hit his leg about the knee, and broke the bone. He farted up, growling at first; but finding his leg broke, fell down again, and then got upon three legs, and gave the most hideous roar I ever heard. I was a little furprised that I had not hit him on the head; however, I took up the fecond piece immediately, and, though he began to move off, fired again, and that him in the head, and had the pleasure to see him drop; and, making but little noife, he lay forugaling for life. Then Xury took heart, and would have me let him go on shore. 'Well, go,' faid I. So the boy jumped into the water, and taking the little gun in one hand, fwam to the shore with the other hand; and coming close to the creature, put the muzzle of the piece to his ear, and fhot him in the head again, which dispatched

This was game indeed to us, but this was no food ;

and I was very forry to lose three charges of powder and shot tipon a creature that was good for nothing to us. However, Xury said, he would have some of him; so he comes on board, and asked me to give him the hatchet. 'For what, Xury?' said I. 'Me cut off his head,' said he. However, Xury could not cut off his head; but he cut off a foot, and brought it with him and it was a monstrous great one.

I bethought myfelf, however, that perhaps the skin of him might, one way or other, be of some value to us, and I resolved to take off his skin if I could. So Xury and I went to work with him; but Xury was much the better workman at it, for I knew very ill how to do it. Indeed, it took us (both) the whole day; but at last we got off the hide of him, and spreading it on the top of our cabin, the sim effectually dried it in two days time,

and it afterwards ferved me to lie upon.

After this ftop, we made on to the fouthward continually for ten or twelve days, living very fparingly on our provinens, which began to abate very much; and going no oftener in to the flore than we were obliged to for fresh water. My design in this was, to make the river Gambia or Senegal, that is to say, any where about the Cape de Verd, where I was in hopes to meet with some European ship; and if I did not, I knew not what course I had to take, but to seek for the islands, or perish there among the negroes. I knew that all the ships from Europe, which sailed either to the coast of Guinea, or to Brazil, or to the East-Indies, made this cape, or those islands; and, in a word, I put the whole of my fortune upon this single point, either that I must meet with some ship, or must perish.

When I had purfued this resolution about ten days longer, as I said, I began to see that the land was inhabited, and in two or three places, as we sailed by, we saw people stand upon the shore to keok at us: we could also perceive they were quite black, and starknaked. I was once inclined to have gone on shore to them; but Xury was my better counsellor, and said

32

to me- 'No go, no go!' However, I hawled in nearer the shore, that I might talk to them, and I found they ran along the shore by me a good way. I observed they had no weapons in their hands, except one, who had a long flender flick, which Kury faid was a lance, and that they would throw them a great way with good aim; fo I kept at a distance, but talked with them by figns as well as I could, and particularly made figns for fomething to eat. They beckened to me to flop my boat, and they would fetch me some meat. Upon this I lowered the top of my fail, and lay by; and two of them ran up into the country, and in less than half an hour came back, and brought with them two pieces of dry flesh, and some corn, such as is the produce of their country: but we neither knew what the one or the other was; however, we were willing to accept it. But how to come at it was our next dispute; for I was not for venturing on shore to them, and they were as much afraid of us: but they took a fafe way for us all, for they brought it to the shore, and laid it down, and went and stood a great way off, till we fetched it on board, and then came close to us again.

We made figns of thanks to them, for we had nothing to make them amends: but an opportunity offered that very instant to oblige them wonderfully; for while we were lying by the fhore, came two mighty creatures, one purfuing the other (as we took it) with great fury, from the mountains towards the fea: whether it was the male purfuing the female, or whether they were in sport or in rage, we could not tell, any more than we could tell whether it was usual or strange; but I believe it was the latter; because, in the first place, those ravenous creatures feldom appear but in the night; and, in the fecond place, we found the people terribly frighted, especially the women. The man that had the lance or dart, did not fly from them, but the rest did; however, as the two creatures ran directly into the water, they did not feem to offer to fall upon the negroes, but plunged themselves into the sea, and swam

about as if they had come for their diversion; at last one of them began to come nearer our boat than ab first I expected; but I lay ready for him; for I had loaded my gun with all possible expedition, and bid Xury load both the others. As soon as he came fairly within my reach, I fired and shot him directly in the head; immediately he sunk down into the water, but role instantly, and plunged up and down as if he was struggling for life; and so indeed he was. He immediately made to the shore; but between the wound, which was his mortal hurt, and the strangling of the water, he died just before he reached the shore.

It is impossible to express the astonishment of these poor creatures at the noise and fire of my gun; some of them were ready even to die for fear, and fell down as dead with the very terror; but when they saw the creature dead, and sunk into the water, and that I made tight to them to come to the shore, they took heart, and time to the shore, and began to search for the creature. I found him by his blood staining the water, and by the help of a rope which I slung round him, and gave the negroes to haul, they dragged him on shore, and found it was a most curious leopard, spotted and fine to an admirable degree; and the negroes held up their hands with admiration, to think what it was I killed him

with.

The other creature, frighted with the flash of fire, and the noise of the gun, swam to the shore, and ran up directly to the mountains, from which they came, nor could I at that distance know what it was. I found quickly the negroes were for eating the slew of this creature; so I was willing to have them take it as a favour from me, which, when I made signs to them that they might take it, they were very thankful for. Immediately they felt to work with him; and though they had no knife, yet, with a sharpened piece of wood, they took off his skin as readily, nay much more readily than we would have done with a knife; they offered me some of the flesh, which I declined, making as if I would give

it them; but made figns for the fkin, which they gave me very freely, and brought me a great deal more of their provision, which though I did not underfrand, yet I accepted. Then I made figns to them for fome water, and held out one of my jars to them, turning it's bottom upward, to fhew that it was empty, and that I wanted to have it filled: they called immediately to fome of their friends, and there came two women, and brought a great vessel made of earth, and burnt, as I suppose, in the sun; this they set down for me, as before, and I sent Xury on shore with my jars, and filled them all three. The women were as stark naked as the men.

I was now furnished with roots and corn, such as it was, and water; and leaving my friendly Negroes, I made forward for about eleven days more, without offering to go near the shore, till I saw the land run out a great length into the sea, at about the distance of sour or five leagues before me: and the sea being very calm, I kept a large offing to make this point: at length, doubling the point at about two leagues from the land, I saw plainly land on the other side to sea-ward: then I concluded, as it was most certain indeed, that this was the Cape de Verd, and those the Islands called from thence Cape de Verd Islands. However, they were at a great distance, and I could not tell what I had best to do: for if I should be taken with a fresh gale of wind, Imight neither reach one or other.

In this dilemma, as I was very pensive, I stepped into the cabin, and set me down, Xury having the helm: when on a studen the boy cried out—' Master, master, a 'ship was a fail!' and the foolish boy was frighted out of his wits, thinking it must needs be some of his master's ships sent to pursue us, when I knew we were gotten far enough out of their reach. I jumped out of the cabin, and immediately saw not only the ship, but what she was, viz. that it was a Portuguese ship; and, as I thought, was bound to the coast of Guinea for Negroes. But when I observed the course she freezed, I was soon

convinced

convinced they were bound fome other way, and did not defign to go any nearer the shore; upon which I stretched out to sea as much as I could, resolving to speak

with them, if possible.

With all the fail I could make, I found I should not he able to come in their way, but that they would be gone by before I could make any fignal to them: but after I had crouded to the utmost, and began to despair, they, it feems, faw me by the help of their perspective glaffes, and that it was fome European boat, which they supposed must belong to some ship that was lost: so they shortened fail to let me come up. I was encouraged by this: and as I had my patron's ancient on board, I made a waft of it to them for a fignal of diffress, and fired a gun, both which they faw: for they told me they faw the smoke, though they did not hear the gun: upon their fignals they very kindly brought to, and lay by for me, and in about three hours I came up with them.

They asked me what I was, in Portuguile, and in Spanish, and in French, but Lunderstood none of them; but at last a, Scots failor, who was on board, called to me, and I answered him, and told him I was an Englishman, that had made my escape out of slavery from the Moors at Sallee; then they bid me come on board,

and very kindly took me in, and all my goods.

It was an inexpressible joy to me, any one would believe, that I was thus delivered, as I esteemed it, from fuch a miferable and almost hopeless condition as I was in: I immediately offered all I had to the Captain of the thip, as a return for my deliverance; but he generously told me, he would take nothing from me, but that all I had should be delivered fafe to me, when I came to the Brazils. 'For,' fays he, I have faved your life on no other terms than as I would be glad to be faved myfelf; and it may one time or other be my lot to be taken ' up in the fame condition : besides,' fays he, ' when 'I carry you to the Brazils, fo great a way from your ' own country, if I should take from you, what little ' you have, you will be flarved there, and then I only * take

take away that life I have given. No, no,' fays he, Signior Inglife. (Mr. Englishman,) I would carry

you thither in charity; and these things will help you to buy your subdiffence there, and your passage home

agam.

As he was charitable in this propofal, so he was just in the performance to a tittle; for he ordered the seamen, that none should offer to touch any thing I had; then he took every thing into his own possession, and gave me back an exact inventory of them, that I might have them

again, even so much as my three earthen jars.

As to my boat it was a very good one, and that he faw; and told me he would buy it of me for the ship's use, and asked me what I would have for it. I told him he had been so generous to me in every thing, that I could not offer to make any price of the boat, but left it entirely to him; upon which he told me he would give me a note of his hand to pay me eighty pieces of eight for it at Brazil: and when it came there, if any one offered to give more, he would make it up ; he offered me also fixty pieces of eight more for my boy Xury, which I was loth to take; not that I was not willing to let the captain have him, but I was very loth to fell the poor boy's liberty, who had affifted me fo faithfully in procuring my own. However, when I let him know my reasons, he owned it to be just, and offered me this medium, that he would give the boy an obligation to fet him free in ten years, if he turned Christian. Upon this, and Xury faying he was willing to go to him, I let the captain have him.

We had a very good voyage to the Brazils, and arrived in the Bay de Todos los Santos, or Saint's Bay, in about twenty two days after. And now I was once more delivered from the most miserable of all conditions of life; and what to do next with myself I was to

confider.

The generous treatment the captain gave me I can never enough remember; he would take nothing of me for my passage, gave me twenty ducats for the leopard.

skin, and forty for the lion's skin, which I had in the boat; and caused every thing I had in the ship to be punctually delivered to me; and what I was willing to fell, he bought; such as the case of bottles, two of my guns, and a piece of the lump of bees-wax, for I had made candles of the reft; in a word, I made about 220 pieces of eight of all my case, and with this stock

went on shore in the Brazils.

I had not been long here, but being recommended to the house of a good honest man like himself, who had an Ingenio, as they call it, that is, a plantation, and a ligar-house, I liv'd with him some time; and acquainted myself, by that means, with the manner of their planting, and making of fugar; and seeing how well the planters lived, and how they grew rich suddenly, I resolved, if I could get a licence to fettle there, I would turn planter among them; resolving, in the mean time, to find out some way to get my money which I had left in London, remitted to me. To this putpose, getting a letter of naturalization, I purchased as much land as my money would reach; and such an one as might be furtable to the stock which I proposed to my-fill to receive from England.

I had a neighbour, a Portuguese of Lisbon, but born of English Payenes, whose name was Wells, and in much such the circumstances as I was; I call him neighbour, because his plantation lay next to mine; and we went on very sociably together; my stock was but low, as well as his, and we rather planted for food, than any thing elle, for about two years. However, we began to increase, and our land began to come in order; so that the third year we planted some tobacce, and made each of us a large piece of ground ready for planting canes in the year to come; but we both wanted help; and now I found more than before, I had done wrong

in parting with my boy Xury.

But, alas! for me to do wrong, that never did right, was no great wonde I had no remedy but to go on. I was jotten into an employment quite remote to my

genius, and directly contrary to the life I delighted in, and for which I forfook my father's house, and broke through all his good advice; nay, I was coming into the very middle station, or upper degree of low life, which my father advised me to before, and which, if I resolved to go on with. I might as well have staid at home, and never satigued myself in the world, as I had done; and I used often to say to myself—14 could have done this as well in England among my friends, as have gone of five thousand miles off to sho it among firangers and a favores in a wildeness, and at such a distance, as new root of the to be the firm any part of the world that had the

· leafi knowledge of me.'

In this manner I med to look upon my condition with the utmost region. I had nobody to converse with but now and then It is neighbour; no work to be done but by the labors or my hands; and I used to my, I lived just like a man oth a ray upon some desclate stand, that had nobody there be handelf. But how just has it been, and bow frould oil men reflect, that when they compare their present on turion withothers that are worte, Heaven may observed no make the exchange, and he convinced of their former felicity, by their experience! I say how just it has been, that the traly solitary life I reflected on in an island, or mere desclation, should be my lot, who had so often unjustly compared it with the life I then led, in which had I continued, I had, in all probability, been exceeding prosperous and rich!

I was in some degree settled in my measures for car-

rying an the plantation, before my kind friend, the captain of the thip, that took me up at fea, went back; for the flip remained there in providing her loading, and prevaring for her voyage, near three months; when telling him what little flock I had left behind me in London, he gave me this friendly and finere advice—
Signier Ingleie, fays he, for to be always called me, if you will give me letters, and a procuration here in fazar to me, with orders to the perfor who has your manney in London, to fend your effects to Lifton, to

fuch persons as I shall direct, and in such goods as are proper for this country, I will bring you the produce of them, (God willing) at my return; but suce human affairs are all subject to changes and distasces, I would have you give orders but for root, skelling; which you fay is half your stock, and let the hazard be run for the first; so that if it comes safe, you may order the rest the same way; and if it miscarries, you may have the other half to have recourse to for your sapply.

This was such wholesome advice, and to ked to friendly, that I could not but be convinced it was the best course I could take; so I accordingly prepared letters to the gentlewoman with whom I had left my money, and a procuration to the Portuguese captain, is he

defined.

I wrote the English captain's widow a full account of all my adventures, my flavery, escape, and how I had met with the Portuguese captain at sea, the humanity of his behaviour, and what condition; I was now in, with all other necessary directions for my supply; and when this honest captain came to Liston, he found means, by some of the English merchants there, to send over not the order only, but a sull account of my stery to a merchant in London, who presented it effectually to her; whereupon she not only delivered the money, but out of her own pocket sent the Portuguese captain a very handsome present for his humanity and charity to me.

The merchant in London verted this rool, in English goods, such as the captain had written for; sent them directly to him at Lisbon, and he brought them all safe

me to the Brazils; among which, without my direction, (for I was too young in my buffnels to think of them) he had taken care to have all forts of tools, ironwork, and utenfils necessary for my plantation, and which were of great use to me.

When this cargo arrived, I thought my fortune made, for I was surprized with the joy of it; and my good steward the captain had laid out the 51. which my friend had fent him for a present for himself, to pur-

chafe and bring me over a fervant under bond for fix years fervice; and would not accept of any confideration, except a little tobacco, which I would have him ac-

cept, being of my own produce.

Neither was this ail; but my goods being all English manufactures, such as cloth, suff, baize; and things particularly valuable and desirable in the country, I found means to sell them to a very great advantage; so that I may say, I had more than four times the value of my first cargo, and was now infinitely beyond my poor neighbour, I mean in the advancement of my plantation; for the first thing I cid, I bought me a negro slave, and an European servant also; I mean, another besides that which the captain brought me from Lisbon.

But as abused prosperity is oftensimes made the very means of our greatest adversity, so was it with me. I went on the next year with great fucces in my plantation; I raised fifty great rolls of tobacco, on my own ground, more than I had disposed of for necessaries among my neighbours; and sheef fifty rolls being each of above one hundred pounds weight, were well cured and laid by, against the return of the fleet from Lisbon. And now, increasing in business and wealth, my head began to befull of projects and undertakings beyond my reach; such as are indeed often the ruin of the best heads in business.

Had I continued in the station I was now in, I had room for all the happy things to have yet befallen me, for which my father so earnestly recommended a quiet retired life, and which he had so sensibly described the middle station of life to be full of; but other things attended me, and I was still to be the wilful agent of all my own miseries: and particularly to encrease my fault and double the reslections upon myself which in my stuture forrows I should have leisure to make; all these misearriages were procured by my apparent obstinate adhering to my soolish inclination of wandering abroad, and pursuing that inclination, in contradiction to the clearest views of doing myself good in a fair and plain pursuit of those prospects, and those measures of life.

life, which Nature and Providence concurred to prefent

me with, and to make my duty.

As I had once done thus in breaking away from my parents, fo I could not be content now, but I must go and leave the happy view I had of being a rich and thriving man in my new plantation, only to pursue a rash and immoderate defire of rising faster than the nature of the thing admitted; and thus I cast myself down again into the deepest gulph of human milery that ever man fell into, or perhaps could be confiftent with life

and a state of health in the world.

To come then by just degrees to the particulars of this part of my flory; you may suppose, that having now lived almost four years in the Brazils, and beginning to thrive and prosper very well upon my plantation, I had not only learned the language, but had contracted acquaintance and friendship among my fellowplanters, as well as among the merchants at St. Salvadore, which was our port; and that, in my discourse among them, I had frequently given them an account of my two voyages to the coast of Guinea, the manner of trading with the Negroes there, and how eafy it was to purchase upon the coast, for trifles, (such as beads, toys, knives, feiffars, hatchets, bits of glass, and the like) not only gold duft, Guinea grains, elephants teeth, &c. but Negroes for the fervice of the Brazils in great

They liftened always very attentively to my discourses on these heads, but especially to that part which related to the buying negroes, which was a trade at that time not only not far entered into, but, as far as it was, had been carried on by the Affientos, (or permission of the King of Spain and Portugal) and engrofied in the public flock; fo that few Negroes were bought, and those ex-

It happened, being in company one day with fome merchants and planters of my acquaintance, and talking of those things very earnestly, three of them came to me the next morning, and told me they had been muling very much upon what I had discoursed of with them the last night; and they came to make a secret proposal to me; and after enjoining me fecrecy, they told me that they had a mind to fit out a ship to go to Guinea; that they had all plantations as well as I, and were straitened for nothing to much as fervants; that as it was a trade that could not publicly fell the Negroes when they came home, fo they defired to make but one voyage, to bring the Negroes on shore privately, and divide them among their own plantations; and, in a word, the question was whether I would go their fupercargo in the ship, to manage the trading part upon the coast of Guinea; and they offered me, that I should have my equal share of the Negroes, without providing any part of the stock.

This was a fair proposal, it must be confessed, had it been made to any one that had not had a fettlement and plantation of his own to look after, which was in a fair way of coming to be very confiderable, and, with a good flock upon it: but with me that was thus established, and had nothing to do but go on as I had begun for three or four years more, and to have fent for the other 100l. from England, and who in that time, and with that little addition, could scarce have failed of being worth 3 or 4000l. fterling, and that increasing too: for me to think of fuch a voyage, was the most preposterous thing that ever man in fuch circumstances could be

guilty of.

But 1, who was born to be my own destroyer, could no more refift the offer than I could refrain my first rambling deligns, when my father's good counfel was loft upon me. In a word, I told them I would go with all my heart, if they would undertake to look after my plantation in my abfence, and would dispose of it to fuch as I should direct, if I miscarried. This they all engaged to do, and entered into writings or covenants to do fo; and I made a formal will, disposing of my plantation and effects, in cale of my death, making the captain of the thip who had faved my life, as before, my universal heir, but obliging him to dispose of

my effects as I had directed in my will; one half of the produce being to himself, and the other to be shipped

to England.

In fhort, I took all possible caution to preferve my effects, and to keep up my plantation. Had I used half as much prudence to have looked into my own interest, and have made a judgment of what I ought to save done, and not to have done, I had certainly never gone away from so prosperous an undertaking; leaving all the probable views of a thriving circumstance, and gone upon a voyage to sea, attended with all its common hazards; to say nothing of the reasons I had to expect particular missfortunes to mytelf.

But I was hurried on, and obeyed blindly the dictates of my fancy, rather than my reason; and accordingly, the ship being fitted out, and the cargo smished, and all things done as by agreement by my partners in the voyage, I went on board in an evil hour again, the 1st of September 1659, being the same day eight years that I went from my father and mother at Hull, in order to act the rebel to their authority, and the fool to my

own interest

Our fhip was about one hundred and twenty tons burden, carried fix guns and fourteen men, befides the mafter, his boy, and myfelf: we had on board no large cargo of goods, except of fuch toys as were fit for our trade with the Negroes; fuch as beads, bits of glaffs, fh.lls, and odd trifles; efpecially little looking-glaffes,

knives, fciffars, hatchets, and the like.

The fame day I went on board we fet fail, standing away to the northward upon our own coaffs, with defign to stretch over for the African coast, when we came into about ten or twelve degrees of northern latitude; which, it feems, was the manner of their course in those days: we had very good weather, only excessive hot, all the way upon our own coast, till we came to the height of Cape St. Augustino; from whence, keeping farther off at sea, we lost fight of land, and steered as if we were bound for the Isle Fernand de Noronba,

LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF

holding our course N. E. by N. and leaving those isles on the east. In this courte we passed the line in about twelve days time, and were by our last observation in 7 degrees 22 minutes northern latitude, when a violent tornado or hurricane, took us quite out of our knowledge. It began from the S. E. came about to the N. W. then fettled in the N. E. from whence it blew in fuch a terrible manner, that for twelve days together. we could do nothing but drive; and foulding away before it, let it carry us wherever Fate and the fury of the winds directed; and during these twelve days I need not fay, that I expected every day to be fwallowed up, nor did any in the thip expect otherwise.

In this diffress, we had, befides the terror of a fform, one of our men die of the calenture, and a man and a boy washed over board. About the twelfth day, the weather abating a little, the mafter made an observation as well as he could, and found that he was in about 11 degrees of north latitude, but that he was 22 degrees of longitude difference welt from Cape St. Augustino, fo that he found he was gotten upon the coast of Guiana, or the north part of Brazil, beyond the river Amazones, towards that of the river Oroonogue, commonly called the Great River; and now he began to confult with me what courie he should take; for the ship was leaky, and very much disabled; and he was for going

directly back to the coast of Brazil.

I was politively against that; and, looking over the charts of the fea coast of America with him, we concluded there was no inhabited country for us to have recourfe to, till we came within the circle of the Caribbee Islands; and therefore resolved to stand away for Barbadoes, which, by keeping off at fea, to avoid the indraught of the bay or gulph of Mexico, we might early perform, as we hoped, in about fifteen days fail; whereas we could not possibly make our voyage to the coast of Africa without fome affiftance both to our ship and

With this delign we changed our course, and steered

away N. W. by W. in order to reach fome of our English islands, where I hoped for relief; but our voyage was otherwise determined; for being in the latitude of 12 degrees 18 minutes, a second storm came upon us, which carried us away with the semi impetuosity westward, and drove us so out of the way of all human commerce, that had all our lives been saved, as to the sea, we were rather in danger of being devoured by saveges, than ever returning to our own country.

In this diffrefs, the wind ftill blowing very hard, one of our men, early one morning, cried out— Land! and we had no fooner run out of the cabin to look out, in hopes of feeing whereabouts in the world we were, but the fhip firuck upon a fand, and in a moment, her motion being to ftopped, the fea broke over her in fuch a manner, that we expected we fhould all have perifhed immediately; and we were even driven into our clofe quarters, to fhelter us from the very foam and spray of

the fea.

It is not easy for any one who has not been in the like condition, to describe or conceive the consernation of men in fuch circumstances; we knew nothing where we were, or upon what land it was we were driven, whether an island or the main, whether inhabited or not inhabited: and, as the rage of the wind was still great though rather less than at first, we could not so much as hope to have the ship hold many minutes without breaking in pieces, unless the winds by a kind of miracle, should turn immediately about. In a word, we fat looking upon one another, and expecting death every moment, and every man acting accordingly, as preparing for another world; for there was little or nothing more for us to do in this: that which was our prefent comfort, and all the comfort we had, was, that contrary to our expectation, the ship did not break yet, and that the mafter faid the wind began to abate.

Now, though we thought that the wind did a little abate, yet the ship having thus struck upon the sand, and sticking too fast for us to expect her getting off, we

4.5

were in a dreadful condition indeed, and had nothing to do but to think of faving our lives as well as we could. We had a boat at our ftern, just before the storm; but she was first staved by dashing against the ship's rudder, and in the next place she broke away, and was either sunk, or driven off to sea; so there was no hope from her: we had another boat on board, but how to get her off into the sea was a doubtful thing; however, there was no room to debate; for we fancied the ship would break in pieces every minute; and some told us she was actually broken already.

In this distress, the mate of our vessel laid hold of the boat, and with the help of the rest of the men, they got her slung over the ship's side, and getting all into her, let go, and committed curselves, being eleven in number, to God's mercy, and the wide sea; for though the storm was abated considerably, yet the sea went dreadfully high upon the shore, and might well be called den wild zee, as the Dutch call the sea in a storm.

And now our cafe was very difinal indeed; for we all faw plainly, that the fea went fo high, that the boat could not eleape, and that we flould be inevitably drowned. As to making fail we had none; nor, if we had, could we have done any thing with it; fo we worked at the oar towards the land, though with heavy hearts, like men going to execution; for we all knew, that when the boat came near flore, the would be broke in a thousand pieces by the breach of the fea. However, we committed our fouls to God in the most earnest manner, and the wind driving us towards the shore, we haftened our destruction with our hands, pulling, as well as we could, towards the land.

What the flore was, whether rock or fand, whether freep or fhoal, we knew not; the only hope that could rationally give us the leaft fludow of expectation, was, if we might happen into fome bay or gulph, or the month of fome river, where by great chance we might have run our boat in, or got under the lee of the land; and perhaps made fmooth water. But there was nothing of

inis.

this appeared; but as we made nearer and nearer the thore, the land looked more frightful than the fea.

After we had rowed, or rather driven, about a league and an half, as we reckoned it, a raging wave, mountain like, came rolling a ftern of us, and plainly bid us expect the conp de grace. In a word, it took us with fuch a fury, that it overfet the boat at once, and feparating us, as well from the boat as from one another, gave us not time hardly to fay, "O God!" for

we were all fwallowed up in a moment.

Nothing can defer the the confusion of thought which I felt when I funk into the water: for though I fwam very well, yet I could not deliver myfelf from the waves fo as to draw breath, till that wave having driven me or rather carried me a vast way on towards the shore, and having ment itself, went back, and left me upon the land almost dry, but half dead with the water I took in: I had fo much presence of mind, as well as breath left, that feeing myfelf nearer the main land than I expected, I got upon my feet, and endeavoured to make on towards the land, as fast as I could, before another wave should return, and take me up again. But I foon found it was impossible to avoid it, for I saw the fea come after me as high as a great hill, and as furious as an enemy which I had no means or firength to contend with; my business was to hold my breath, and raife myfelf upon the water, if I could, and so by fwining to preferve my breathing, and pilot myfelf towards the shore, if possible; my greatest concern now being, that the wave, as it would carry me a great way towards the shore when it came on, might not carry me back again with it, when it gave back towards the fea.

The wave that came upon me again buried me at once twenty or thirty feet in its own body; and Leouid feel myfelf carried with a mighty force and fivilineis towards the flore, a very great way; but I held my breath, and affilted myfelf to fwim ftill forward with all my might. I was ready to built with holding my breath, when, as I found myfelf rifing up, fo, to my

immediate

immediate relief, I found my head and hands shoot out above the furface of the water; and though it was not two feconds of time that I could keep myfelf fo, yet it relieved me greatly, gave me breath and new courage I was covered again with water a good while, but not fo long but I held it out; and finding the water had fpent itself, and began to return, I struck forward against the return of the waves, and felt ground again with my feet. I flood ftill a few moments to recove breath, and till the waters went from me, and then took to my heels, and ran with what firength I had farther towards the shore. But neither would this deliver me from the fury of the fea, which came pouring after me again, and twice more I was lifted up by the waves, and carried forwards as before, the shore being very flat.

The last time of these two had well near been fatal to me; for the fea, having hurried me along as before, landed me, or rather dashed me, against a piece of a rock, and that with fuch force, as it left me fenfelels, and indeed helpless, as to my own deliverance; for the blow taking my fide and breaft, beat the breath, as it were, quite out of my body; and had it returned again immediately, I must have been strangled in the water; but I recovered a little before the return of the waves; and feeing I flould be covered again with the water, I resolved to hold fast by a piece of the rock, and so to hold my breath, if poffible, till the wave went back, Now as the waves were not fo high as at first, being near land, I held my hold till the wave abated; and then fetched another run, which brought me so near the flore, that the next wave, though it went over me, yet did not iwallow me up fo as to carry me away; and the next run I took, I got to the main land, where, to my great comfort, I clambered up the chifts of the shore and fat me down upon the grafs, free from danger, and quite out of the reach of the water.

I was now landed, and fafe on shore, and began to look up and shank God that my life was saved, in a case

wherein

wherein there was, fome minutes before, scarce any run, to hope. I believe it is impossible to express to the life, what the ecfacies and transports of the soul are, when it is so saved, as I may fay, out of the very grave; and I do not wonder now at that custom, viz. I have when a malefactor, who has the halter about his reck, is tied up, and just going to be turned off, and has a reprieve brought him; I say, I do not wonder that they bring a surpcion with it, to let him blood that very moment they tell him of it, that the surprize may not drive the animal spirits from the heart, and over-whelm him.

For fudden joys, like griefs, confound at first.

I walked about on the shore, lifting up my hands, and my whole being, as I may say, wrapped up in the contemplation of my deliverance, making a thousand gestures and motions, which I cannot describe, resteding upon all my conrades that were drowned, and that there should not be one soul saved but myself; for as for them, I never saw, them afterwards, or any sign of them, except three of their hats, one cap, and two slices that were not fellows.

I cast my eyes to the stranded vessel, when the breach, and froth of the sea being so big, I could hardly see it, it lay so far off; and considered, 'Lord! how was it

* possible I could get on shore!

After I had folaced my mind with the comfortable part of my condition, I began to look round me, to fee what kind of place I was in, and what was next to be done; and I foon found my comforts abate, and that, in a word, I had adreadful deliverance; for I was wet, had no electres to shift me, nor any thing either to eat or drink; to comfort me; neither did I see any profect before me, but that of perishing with hunger, or being devoured by wild beasts; and that which was particularly affecting to me was, that I had no weap meither to hunt or kill any creature for my sufference.

nance, or to defend myself against any other creature that might desire to kill me for theirs. In a word, I had nothing about me but a knife, a tobacco-pipe, as a little tobacco in a box; this was all my provision; and this threw me into terrible agonies of mind, so that for a while I ran about like a mad men. Night coming upon me, I begun, with an heavy heart, to consider what would be my lot, if there were any ravenous beats in that country, seeing at night they always come abroad

for their prey.

All the remedy that offered to my thoughts at that time was, to get up into a thick bully tree, like a fix but thorny, which grew near me, and where I refelved to fit all night, and confider the next Cay what death I should die; for, as yet, I faw no profiped of life. I walked about a furlong from the there, to see if I could find any fresh water to drink, which I did to my great joy; and having drank, and put a little tobacco in my mouth, to prevent hunger, I went to the tree; and, getting up into it, endeavoured to place myself so, as that, if I should steep, I might not fall; and, having cut me a short stick like a truncheon, for my desence, I took up my lodgings; and having been excessively fatigued, I fell sait askep, and stept as comfortably as I believe any person could have done in my situation.

When I awoke it was broad day, the weather clear, and the fform abated; I was greatly surprised to find the hip had been lifted off in the night, from the fand where she lay, by the swelling of the tide, and was driven up almost as far as the rock which I first mentioned, and where I had been so bruised by being dashed against it; this being within about a mile from the shore where I was, and the ship seeming to stand up still, I wished myself on board, that at least, I might

fave fome necessary things for my use.

When I came down from my apartment in the tree, I looked about me again; and the first thing I found was the boat, which lay as the wind and sea had tossed her upon the land, about two miles to my right hand. I

walked

walked as far as I could upon the flore to get at her; but found a neck or inlet of water between me and the boat, which was about half a mile broad; fo I came back for the prefent, being more intent upon getting to the ship, where I hoped to find fomething for my prefent substitute.

A little after noon I found the fea very calm, and the ter of a mile of the ship: and here I found a fresh renewing of my grief; for I faw evidently that if we had kept on board, we had been all faie; that is to fay we had all got fafe on fhore, and I had not been so milerable as to be left entirely deflitute of all comfort and company, as I now was: this forced tears from my eyes again; but as there was little relief in that, I refolved if possible to get to the ship; so I pulled off my cloathes and took to the water; but when I came to the this, my difficulty was full greater to know how to get on board: as the lay a-ground, and high out of the water, there was nothing within my reach to lay hold of: I fwam round her twice, and the fecond time I espied a intell piece of rope, which I wondered I did not fee at first, hang down by the fore-chains, so low, as with great difficulty I got hold of it, and by the help of that rope, got up into the fore-calle of the ship. Here I found that the was belged, and a great deal of water in the hold, but that the lay to on the fide of a bank of hard fand, or rather earth, that her ftern lay lifted up on the bank, and confequently her head low to the water: by this means all her quarter was free, and all that was in that dry; for you may be fure my work was to fearch, and part to fee what was spoiled and what was not : and first I found, that all the ship's provisions were dry, and un touched by the water; and being very well disposed to eat, I went to the bread-room, and filled my pockets with bifcuit, and eat as I went about other things, for I had no time to lofe. I also found some rum in the great cabin, of which I took a large dram, and which I had, indeed, need enough of, to raise my drooping spirits. Now

52

Now I wanted nothing but a boat, to furnish myself with many things which I forefaw would be very ne-

ceffary.

It was in vain to fit fill and wish for what was not to behad; and this extremity rouzed my application. We had feveral spare yards, and two or three large spars of wood, and a spare top-mast or two in the ship; I refolved to go to work with thefe, and threw as many of them over-board as I could manage for their weight, tying every one with a rope, that they might not drive away; when this was done, I went down the ship's fide, and drawing them to me, I tied four of them fast together at both ends as well as I could, in the form of a raft; and, laying two or three thort pieces of plank upon them crofs-ways, I found I could walk upon it very well, but that it was not able to bear any great weight, the pieces being too light. To remove this inconvenience, with a carpenter's law I cut a spare tepmast into three lengths, and added them to my raft, with a great deal of labour and pains; but the hope of furnishing myfelf with necessaries, encouraged me to go beyond what I should have been able to have done upon another occasion.

My raft being now ftrong enough to bear any reafonable weight, my next care was what to load it with, and how to preferve what was on it from the furf of the fea; but I was not long confidering this: I first laid all the planks or boards upon it that I could get; and having confidered well what I most wanted, I got three of the feamen's chefts, which I had broken open and emptied, and lowered them down upon my raft; the first of these I filled with provisions, viz. bread, rice, three Dutch cheefes, five pieces of dried goat's flesh, which we lived much upon, and a little remainder of European corn, which had been laid by for some fowls we brought to fea with us, but the fowls were killed; there had been some barley and wheat together; but to my great disappointment, I found afterwards, that the rats had eaten or spoiled it all. As for liquors, I found several

cales

cases of bottles belonging to our skipper, in which were fome cordial waters, and in all about five or fix gallons of arrack; these I stowed by themselves, there being no need to put them into the cholt, nor indeed any room for them. While I was doing this, I found the tide began to flow, though very calm, and I had the mortification to fee my coat, fhirt, and waiftcoat, which I had left on fhore upon the fand, go away; as for my breeches, which were only linen, and open at the knees, I fwam on board in them and my flockings : however, this put me upon rummaging for cloaths, of which I found enough, but took no more than I wanted for present use, for I and other things which my eye was more upon; as, first, tools to work with on shore, and it was after long learching that I found out the carpenter's cheit, which was indeed a very useful prize to me, and much more valuable than a ship-loading of gold would have been at that time. I got it down to my raft, even whole as it was, without lonng time to look into it, for I knew in general what it contained.

My next care was for some ammunition and arms. There were two very good fowling pieces in the great cabin, and two piffols; these I secured with some powder horas, a finall bag of fhot, and two old rufty fwords: I knew there were three barrels of powder in the ship, but could not tell where the gunner had flowed them; but with much fearch I found them: two were dry and good, but the third had taken water; the two that were good I got to my raft with the arms. And now I thought myfelf pretty well freighted, and began to think how I should get to shore with them, having neither fail, car, or rudder, and the least cap-full of wind would have

overfet all my navigation.

I had three encouragements: 1. A fincoth and calm fea. 2. The tide rifing and fetting in to the thore. 3. What little wind there was blew me towards the land. And thus, having found two or three broken oars belonging to the boat, belides the tools which were in the cheft, two faws, an axe, and a hammer, with this

cargo I put to fea. For a mile, or thereabouts, my raft went very well, only that I found it drive a little diffant from the place where I had landed before; by which I perceived there was fome indraught of the water, and confequently I hoped to find fome creek of the river there, which I might make use of as a port to get to

land with my cargo.

As I imagined, so it was; there appeared before me a little opening of the land. I found a strong current of the tide fet into it; fo I guided my raft as well as I could to keep in the middle of the fiream: but here I had like to have fuffered a fecond shipwreck, which, if I had, I think verily would have broken my heart; for, knowing nothing of the coaft, my raft run aground at one end upon a shoal, and not being aground at the other, all my cargo had nearly flipped off towards that end which was a-float, and fo fallen into the water: I did my utmost to prevent this, by setting my back against the chefts, to keep them in their places, but could not thrust off the raft with all my strength; neither durk I ftir from the posture I was in, but supporting the chefts with all my might, flood in that manner near half an hour, in which time the rifing of the water brought me a little more upon a level; and foon after, the water fill rifing, my raft floated again, and I thrust her off with the oar I had into the channel; and then driving un higher, I at length found myfelf in the mouth of a little river, with land on both fides, and a fireng current of tide running up. I looked on both fides for a proper place to get to shore, for I was not willing to be driven too high up the river, hoping in time to fee fome thip at fea, and therefore refolved to place myielf as near the coast as I could.

At length I efpied a little cove on the right fhore of the creek, to which, with great pains and difficulty, I guided my raft; and at last got to near, that, reaching ground with my oar, I could thrust her directly in; but here I had like to have dipped all my cargo in the sea again; for that shore lying pretty steep, that is to say,

floping, there was no place to land, but where one end of the float, if it ran on fhore, would be fo high, and the other fink lower, as before, that it would endanger my cargo again: all that I could do, was to wait till the tide was at the higheft, keeping the raft with my oar like an anchor, to hold the fide of it fast to the shore, near a flat piece of ground which I expected the water would flow over; and fo it did. As foon as I found water enough (for my raft drew about a foot of water) I thrust her upon that flat piece of ground, and there fattened or incorred her, by sticking my two broken oars into the ground; one on one fide, near one end, and one on the other fide near the other end; and thus I lay till the water ebbed away, and left my raft and all my cargo state on thore.

My next work was to view the country, and feek a proper place for my habitation, and where to flow my goods, to fecure them from whatever might happen. Where I was I yet knew not; whether on the continent or on an ifland; whether inhabited, or not inhabited; whether in danger of wild beafts, or not. There was a hill not above a mile from me, which rofe up very fleep and high, and which feemed to over-top fome other hills that lay as in a ridge from it northward : I took out one of the fowling-pieces, and one of the piftols, and a horn of powder; and thus armed, I travelled for discovery up to the top of that hill, where, after I had with great labour and difficulty got up, I immediately faw my fate to my great affliction; viz. that I was in an island environed every way with the fea, no land to be feen except lome rocks which lay a great way off, and two iflands lefs than this, which lay about three leagues to the west.

I found also that the island I was in was barren, and, as I had reason to believe, uninhabited, except by wild beafts, of which, however, I saw none; but I discovered abundance of fowls, though I knew not their kinds; neither, when I killed them, could I tell what was fit for food, and what not. On my return I shot at a great

bird which I law fitting upon a tree on the fide of a large wood; I believe it was the first gun that had been fired there fince the creation of the world. I had no focuse fired, but from all parts of the wood there arose an extraordinary number of fowls of many forts, making a confused fcreaming and crying, every one according to his usual note; but not one of them of any kind that I knew; as for that creature I killed, I took it to be a kind of hawk, its colour and beak resembling it, but it had no talons or claws more than common; its slessiwas carrion and fit for nothing.

Contented with this discovery, I came back to my raft, and began working to bring my cargo on shore, which took me up the rest of the day: what to do with myself at night, I know not, nor indeed where to reft; for I was afraid to lie down on the ground, not knowing but from wild heaft might deson me, though I afterwards

found there was really no need for those fears.

However, as well as I could, I barricadoed mythir round with the chefts and boards that I had brought on thore, and made a kind of hut for that night's lodging; as for food, I yet faw not which way to lupply mytels, except that I had obferved two or three creatures like hares run out of the wood where I that the fow!.

I now began to coulider, that I might yet get a great many things out of the ship which would be useful to me, and particularly some of the rigging and falls, and such other things as might come to hand; and I resolved to make another voyage on board the vessel, if possible; and as I knew the first storm that blew must necessarily break her all in pieces, I resolved to set all other things apart till I got every thing out of the ship I could. I then called a council, that is to say, in my thoughts, whether or not I should take back the rait; but this appeared impracticable; so I resolved to go as before, when the tide was down; and I did so, only that I stripped before I went from my but, having nothing on but a chequered shirt, a pair of linen drawers, and a pair of pumps on my feet.

I got on board the ship as before: and prepared a second rafe; and having had experience from the first. I neither made this so unwieldy, nor loaded it so hard; but yet I brought away several things very useful to me: as, sirst in the carpenter's store I found two or three bags full of nails and spikes, a great serw jack, a dozen or two of hatchets, and above all, that most useful thing called a grand-stone: all these I secured, together with several things belonging to the guiner, particularly two or three iron-crows, and two barrels of musket bullets, seven muskets, and another fowling-piece, with some small quantity of powder more; a large bag full of small shot, and a great roll of sheet lead; but this last was so heavy, I could not host it up to get it over the ship's side.

Befides thefe things, I took all the men's cloaths that I could find, and a spare fore-top fail, hammock, and fome bedding; and with this I loaded my second raft, and brought them also all safe on shore, to my very

great comfort.

I was under fome apprehensions during my absence from the land, that at least my provisions might be devoured on thore; but when I came back, I found no fign of any visitor, only there lat a creature like a wild cat upon one of the chefts, which, when I came towards it, ran away to a little distance, and then stood still; she fat very composed and unconcerned, and looked full in my face, as if the had a mind to be acquainted with me. I presented my gun at her, but she did not understand it, the was perfectly unconcerned at it, nor did the offer to ftir away; upon which I totled her a bit of bifeuit, though by the way I was not very free of it, for my frore was not great. However, I spared her a bit, I say, and the went to it, fmelled of it, and eat it, and looked (as if pleased) for more; but as I could spare no more, she marched off.

Having got my fecond cargo on flore, (though I was obliged to open the barrels of powder, and bring them by parcels, for they were too heavy, being large cafes)

I went

I went to work to make a little tent with the fail, and fome poles which I cut for that purpose; and into this tent I brought every thing that I knew would spoil, either with rain or fun; I piled all the empty chefts and

up an end without; and f reading one of the beds upon my gun at length by me. I went to bed for the first time, and flept very quietly all night: I was very weary and heavy; for the night before I had flept little, and had laboured very hard all day, as well to fetch those

things from the ship, as to get them on shore.

I had the largest magazine of all kinds now that ever was laid up, I believe for one man; but I was not fature, I thought I ought to get every thing out of her I could; fo every day at low water I went on board, and brought away femething or other; but particularly the third time I went. I brought away as much of the rigging as I could, as also all the small ropes and rope-twine I could get, with a piece of spare canvas, which was to mend the fails upon occasion, and the barrel of wet gun-powder; in a word, I brought away all the fails first and last, only that I was obliged to cut them in pieces, and bring as much at a time as I could; for they were no more useful to me for fails, but as mere

But that which comforted me more still, was, that at last of all, after I had made five or fix such voyages as thefe, and thought I had nothing more to expect from the ship, that was worth meddling with; I say, after all this, I found a great hogshead of bread, three large rundlets of rum or spirits, a box of fine sugar, and a barrel of fine flour; this was furprizing to me, because I had given over expecting any more provisions, except what was spoiled by the water. I soon emptied the hogfhead of the bread, and weapped it up, parcel by parcel, in pieces of the fails, which I cut out; and, in a word, I got all this fafe on those also, though at feveral times.

The next day I made another voyage; and now having plundered the ship of what was portable, and fit to hand our, I began with the cables; and cutting the great cable into pieces, fuch as I could move, I got two cables and a hawfer on thore, with all the iron work I could get; and having cut down the sprit-fail-yard and the mizen yard, and everything I could to make a large was to unwieldy, and to overladen, that after I had entered the little cove, where I had landed the reft of my goods, not being able to guide it fo handily as I did the other, it overlet, and threw me and all my cargo into the water. As for mylelf, it was no great harm, for I was near the thore; but as to my carge, it was great part of it loft, especially the iron, which I expected would have been of great use to me; however, when the tide was out, I got most of the pieces of cable ashore, and fome of the iron, though with infinite labour, for I was obliged to dip for it into the water, a work which fatigued me very much; after this, I went every day on board, and brought away what I could get,

I had been thirteen days on thore, and eleven times on board the thip; in which time I had prought away all that one pair of hands could well be supposed capable to bring; though I believe varily, had the calm weather held, I should have prought away the whole ship, piece by piece; but preparing for the twelfth time to go on board. I found the wind began to rife; however, at low water, I went on board; and though I shought I had runnpaged the cabin to effectually as that nothing more could be found, yet I discovered a locker with drawers in it, in one of which I found two or three rations, and one pair of large feithers, with ten or a dozen good knives and forks; in another, I sound about thirty-fix

60 LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF

thirty-fix pounds value in money, some Europeancoin, some Brazil, some pieces of eight, some gold, and some filver.

I finiled to myfelf at the fight of this money. O ' drug!' faid I aloud, what art thou good for? Thou art of no worth to me, no, not the taking off the ground! one of those knives is worth all this heap; L have no manner of use for thee; even remain where ' thou art, and go to the bottom as a creature whole Ife is not worth faving!' However, upon fecond thoughts, I took it away, and wrapping all this in a rait; but while I was preparing this, I found the fky overcast, and the wind began to rife, and in a quarter of an hour it blew a fresh gale from the shore; it prefently occurred to me, that it was in vain to pretend to make a raft, with the wind off thore, and that it was my bufiness to be gone before the tide of flood began. otherwise I might not be able to reach the shore at all: accordingly, I let myself down into the water; and fwam acrofs the channel, which lay between the ship and the fand, and even that with great difficulty, partly with the weight of the things I had about me, and partly the rougness of the water; for the wind role very halfily, and before it was quite high-water, it blew

But I was got home to my little tent, where I lay with all my wealth about me very fecure. It blew hard all that night; and in the morning, when I looked out, behold, no more ship was to be feen. I was a little surprized; but recovered myself with this satisfactory reflection; viz. that I had lost no time, nor abated any dillgence, to get every thing out of her that could be useful to me; and that indeed there was little left in her that I was able to bring away, if I had more time. I now gave over any more thought of the ship, or of any thing out of her, except what might drive on shore from her wreck, as indeed divers pieces of her alterwards did; but those things were of small use to me.

My

My thoughts were now wholly employed about fecuring my felf against either favages, if any should appear, or wild beafts, if any were in the island, and I had many thoughts of the method how to do this, and what kind of dwelling to make; whether I should make me a cave in the earth, or a tent upon the earth; and, in short, I resolved upon both: the manner and description of which it may not be improper to give an account.

I foon found the place I was in would not do for my fettlement, particularly because it was upon a low moorist ground near the sea, and I believed would not be wholesome, and more particularly, because there was no water near it; so I resolved to find a more

healthy and more convenient fpot of ground.

I consulted feveral things in my intuation, which I found would be proper for me; furth, health and fresh water; secondly, shelter from the heat of the fun; thirdly, security from ravenous creatures, whether man or beast; fourthly, a view to the sea, that if God sent any ship insight, I might not lose any advantage of my deliverance, for which I was not willing to bannish my expectation.

In fearch of a place proper for this, I found a little plain on the fide of a rising hill, whose form towards this little plain was as steep as an house side, so that nothing could come down upon me from the top: on the side of this rock there was an hollow place, worn a little way in, like the entrance or door of a cave, but there was not really any cave or way into the rock at all.

On the flat of the green, just before this hollow place, I resolved to pitch my tent. This plain was not above an hundred yards broad, and about twice as long, and lay like a green before the door, and at the end of it descended irregularly every way down into the low grounds by the sea fide. It was on the N. N. W. side of the hill, so that it was sheltered from the heat every day, till it came to a W. and by S. fun, or thereabouts, which in those countries is near the setting.

Previous

Previous to fetting up my tent, I drew an half circle before the hollow place, which took in about ten yards in it's femi-diameter from the rock, and twenty yards in its diameter from it's beginning and ending.

In this half circle I pitched two rows of firong stakes, driving them into the ground till they stood very strm like piles; the biggest end being out of the ground above five feet and an half, and sharpened on the top: the two rows did not stand above six inches from one mother.

another.

I then took the pieces of cable which I had cut in the fhip, and laid them in rows upon one another, within the circle, between those two rows of stakes, up to the top; placing other stakes in the inide, leaning against them, about two feet and a half high, like a tpur to a post; and this fence was so strong, that neither man nor beast could get into it, or over it. This cost me a great deal of time and labour, especially to cut the piles in the wood, bring them to their places, and drive them into the earth.

I made the entrance into this place not by a door, but by a fhort ladder to go over the top; which ladder, when I was in, I lifted over after me; and fo I was completely fenced in, and fortified, as I thought, from all the world, and confequently flept fecure in the night, which otherwife I could not have done: though, as it appeared afterwards, there was no need of all this caution against enemies from whom I had apprehended danger.

Into this fence, or fortrefs, with infinite labour, I carried all my riches, all my provisions, ammunition, and stores; and I made me a large tent also, to preferve me from the rains, that in one part of the year are very violent there. I made it double, viz. one smaller tent within, and one larger tent above it; and covered the uppermost part with a large tarpaulin, which I had laved among the fails.

And now I lay no more for a time in the bed which I had brought on fhore, but in an hammock, which was indeed a very good one, and belonged to the mate of

the thip

Into this tent I brought all my provisions, and every thing that would spoil by the wet; and having thus inclosed all my goods, I made up the entrance, which till now I had left open, and to passed and repassed, as I

faid, by a fhort ladder.

When I had done this, I began to work my way into the rock, and bringing all the earth and fromes that I dug down, and through my tent, I laid them up within my fence in the nature of a terrace, fo that it raised the ground within about a foot and a half; and thus I made a cave just behind my tent, which served me like a cellar

It cost me much labour, and many days, before all these things were brought to perfection. At the same time it happened, after I had laid my scheme for setting up the tent, and making the cave, that a fform of rain falling from a thick dark cloud, a fudden flash of lightning happened, which was succeeded by a violent clap of thunder. I was not fo much furprized with the lightning, as I was with the thought which darted into my mind as fwift as the lightning itself- O my powder!' My very heart funk within me, when I thought, that at one blaft all my powder might be destroyed; on which, not my defence only, but the providing my food, as I thought, entirely depended. I was nothing near fo anxious about my own danger; though, had the powder took fire, I should have never known who had hurt

Such impression did this make upon me, that after the form was over, I laid afide all my work, my building and fortifying, and applied myfelf to make bags and boxes to separate my powder, and to keep it a little and little in parcels, in hopes, that whatever might come, it might not all take fire at once, and to keep to apart, that it should not be possible to make one part fire another. I finished this work in about a fortnight; and I think my powder, which in all was about 140 pounds weight, was divided into no lefs than an hundred parcels. As to the barrel that had been wet, I did not apprehend any

64 LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF

any danger from that, so I placed a part of it in my new cave, which I called my kitchen; and the rest I hid up and down in holes among the rocks, so that no wet might come to it, marking very carefully where I laid it.

In the interval of time while this was doing, I went out at least once every day with my gun, as well to divert myself, as to see if I could kill any thing fit for food, and as near as I could to acquaint myfelf with what the Island produced. The first time I went out, I soon difcovered that there were goats in the Island, which was a great fatisfaction to me; but then it was attended with this misfortune, viz. that they were fo flay, fo fubtle, and fo fwift of foot, that it was the most difficult thing in the world to come at them; but I was not discouraged at this, not doubting but I might now and then shoot one, as it soon happened; for after I had found their haunts a little, I laid wait in this manner for them. I observed, if they faw me in the vallies, though they were upon the rocks, they would run away as in a terrible fright; but if they were feeding in the vallies, and I was upon the rocks, they took no notice of me; from whence I concluded, that by the polition of their optics, their fight was fo directed downward, that they did not readily fee objects that were above them. In confequence of this observation, I took the following method: I always climbed the rocks first, to get above them, and then had frequently a fair mark. The first shot I made among these creatures I killed a she-goat which had a little kid by her, to whom she gave suck, which grieved me heartily; but when the old one fell, the kid stood flock-ftill by her till I came and took her up; and not only fo, but when I carried the old one with me upon my fhoulders, the kid followed me quite to my inclosure; upon which I laid down the dam, and took the kid in my arms, and carried it over my pale in hopes to have bred it up tame; but it would not eat; fo I was forced to kill it, and eat it myfelf; these two supplied me with flesh a great while, for I eat sparingly, and saved my provisions (my bread especially) as much as I pos-

Having now fixed my habitation, I found it absolutely necessary to provide a place to make a fire in, and fuel to burn; and what I did for that, as also how I enlarged my cave, and what conveniences I made, I shall give a full account of in it's place: but I must first give some little account of myfelf, and of my thoughts about living, which it may well be supposed were not a few.

I had a difinal prospect of my condition; for as I was not cast away upon that Island without being driven, as is faid by a violent from quite out of the course of our intended voyage, and a great way, viz. fome hundreds of leagues out of the ordinary course of the trade of mankind, I had great reason to confider it as a determination of Hoeven, that in this defolate place, and in this defolate manner, I should end my life; the tears would run plentifully down my face when I made thefe reflections: and fometimes I expollulated with mylelf, why Providence should thus compleatly min it's creatures, and render them to abfolutely miterable, to abandoned without help, and fo entirely depressed, that it could hardly be rational to be thankful for fuch a life.

. But fornething always returned fwift upon me to check these thoughts, and to reprove me; and particularly one day walking with my gun in my hand by the fea fide, I was very penfive upon the fubject of my prefent condition, when reason, as it were, put in, expostulating with me the other way, thus; 'Well, you are in a defolate condition, itis true; but, pray, remember, where are the rest of you! Did not you come eleven of 'you into the boat? Where are the ten? Why are not they faved, and you loft? Why are you fingled

out? It is better to be here or there?' And then I pointed to the fea. All evils are to be confidered with the good that is in them, and with what worse attended

It then occurred to me again, how well I was furnished for my subsistence, and what would have been my cale, if it had not happened, which was an bundred thousand to one, that the ship floated from the place where first she struck, and was driven so near to the shore that I had time to get all these things out of her. What would have been my case, if I had been to have lived in the condition in which I at first came on shore, without necessaries of life, or any means to supply and procure them? ' Particularly,' faid I aloud, (though to myfelf) 'what could I have done without a gun; without ' ammunition; without any tools to make any thing, or to work with? without cloaths, bedding, a tent, or any manner of coverings?' And that now I had all these to a sufficient quantity, and was in a fair way to provide myself in such a manner, as to live without my gun when my ammunition was fpent, fo that I had a tolerable view of fublifting without any want as long as I lived: for I confidered from the beginning how I should provide for the accidents that might happen, and for the time that was to come, even not only after my ammunition should be spent, but even after my health or ftrength fhould decay.

I confess I had not then entertained any notion of my ammunition being destroyed at one blast, I mean, my powder being blown up by lightning; and this made the thoughts of it surprizing to me, when it thundered

and lightened.

And now, being to enter into a melancholy relation of a feene of filent life, fuch perhaps as was never heard of in the world before, I shall take it from its beginning, and continue it in it's order. It was, by my account, the 30th of September, when, in the manner as before observed, I first set foot upon this horrid Island, when the sun, being to us in it's autumnal equinox, was almost just over my head; for I reckoned myfelt, by observation, to be in the latitude of 9 degrees 22 minutes south of the line.

After I had been there about ten or tweive days, it came into my thoughts that I should lose my reckoning of time for want of books, and pen and ink, and should

even forget the Sabbath-days from the working-days; but to prevent this, I cut it with my knife upon a large post, in capital letters; and making it into a great cross, I set it up on the shore where I sirst landed, viz. 'I came on shore here the 30th of September, 1659.' Upon the sides of this square post I cut every day a notch with my knife, and every seventh day a notch as long again as the rest, and every surfect of the month as long again as that long one; and thus I kept my calendar, or weekly,

monthly, and yearly reckoning of time.

In the next place, we are to observe, that among the many things which I brought from the ship in several voyages, which (as before-mentioned) I made to it, I got feveral things of lefs value, but not at all lefs ufeful to me, which I omitted fetting down before; as in particular, pens, ink, and paper, feveral parcels in the captain's, mate's, gunner's, and carpenter's keeping, three or four compasses, some mathematical instruments, dials, perspectives, charts, and books of navigation, all which I huddled together, whether I might want them or no; also I found three very good bibles, which came to me in my cargo from England, and which I had packed up among my things: fome Portugueze books alfo, and among them two or three Popish prayer-books, and feveral other books, all which I carefully fecured. And I must not forget that we had in the ship a dog and two cats, of whose eminent history I must have occasion to fay fomething in it's place; for I carried both the cats with me; and as for the dog, he jumped out of the ship, and twam to me the day after I went on shore with my first cargo, and was a trusty servant to me many years; I wanted nothing that he could fetch me, nor any company that he could make up to me; I only wanted to have him talk to me, but that he could not do. As I observed before, I found pen, ink, and paper, and I husbanded them to the utmost; and while my ink lasted, I kept things very exact, but after that was gon, I could not; for I could not make ink, by any means I

And this put me in mind that I wanted many things, notwithitanding all I had amafied together; and of these, this of ink was one; as allo a spade, pick-axe, and shovel, to dig or remove the earth; needles, pins, and thread. As for linen, I soon learned to want that

without much difficulty.

This want of tools made every work I did go on heavily, and as it was near a whole year before I had entirely finished my little pale, or furrounded habitation; the piles or stakes, which were as heavy as I could well lift, were a long time in cutting and preparing in the woods, and more by far in bringing home; to that I spent sometimes two days in cutting and bringing home one of those posts, and a third day in driving it into the ground; for which purpose I got a heavy piece of wood at first, but at last bethought myself of one of the iron crows, which however, though I found, it yet made driving those posts or piles very laborious and tedious work.

But what need I have been concerned at the tedioufness of any thing I had to do, seeing I had time enough to do it in! Nor had I any other employment, if that had been over, at least that I could foresee, except ranging the Island, to seek for food, which I did more or lets

every day.

I now began feriously to confider my condition, and the circumstances I was reduced to, and I drew up the state of my affairs in writing: not so much to leave them to any that were to come after me, (for I was like to have but sew heirs) as to deliver my thoughts from daily pouring upon them, and assilicting my mind; and as my reason began now to master my despondency, I comforted myself as well as I could, and so set the good against the evil, that I might have something to distinguish my case from a worse; and I stated it very impartially, like debtor and creditor, (the comfort I enjoyed, against the miseries I suffered) thus—

EVIL.

EVIL.

GOOD.

I am cast upon an horrible desolate Island; void of all re-

I am fingled out, as it were, from all the world, to be mi-

I am divided from mankind, a folitary one banished from human fociety.

I have no cloaths to cover

me.

I am without defence or means to refift any violence

of man or beaft.

I have no foul to fpeak

to, or relieve me.

But I am alive, and no drowned, as all my ship's company was.

But I am fingled out from all the ship's crew, to be spared from death.

But I am not starved, and perishing on a barren place, affording no fustenance,

But I am in a hot climate, where they are not wanted.

But I am cast on an Island where I see neither men nor wild-heasts to hurt me.

But enough to fupply my wants, as long as I live.

Upon the whole, here was an undoubted testimony, that there was scarce any condition in the world so mi-ferable, but there was something negative, or something positive, to be thankful in it; and let this stand as a direction from the experience of the most miserable of all conditions in this world, that we may always find in it something to comfort ourselves from, and to set, in the description of good and evil, on the credit side of the account.

Having now brought my mind a little to relish my condition, and given over looking out to sea, in hopes of observing a ship; I say, giving over these things I began to apply mylest to accommodate my way of living, and to make things as easy to me as I could.

I have already described my habitation, which was a tent under the fide of a rock, surrounded with a strong pale of posts and cables, but I might now rather call it a wall; for I raised a kind of wall up against it of turs, about two feet thick on the outside; and after some time, (I think it was a year and an half) I raised rasters from it, leaning to the rock, and thatched or covered it with boughs of trees, and such things as I could get

70

to keep out the rain, which I found at some times of the

year very violent.

I have already observed how I brought all my goods into this pale, and into the cave which I had made behind me; but I must observe too, that, at first, this was a confused heap of goods, which, as they lay in no order, so they took up all my place; I had no room to turn my-felf, and therefore set about enlarging my cave, by working farther into the earth; for it was a loole sandy rock, which yielded easily to the labour I bestowed on it.

When I found myfelf pretty fafe as to beafts of prey, I worked fide-ways to the right-hand into the rock; and then turning to the right again, worked quite out, and made my door to come out to the out-fide of my pale or

fortification.

This gave me not only to egress and regress, as it was a back-way to my tent, and to my store-house, but

alforoum to flow my goods

And now I began to apply myself to make such necessary things as I found I most wanted, particularly a chair and a table; for, without these, I was not able to enjoy the sew comforts I had in the world; I could not write or eat, or do several things, with so much pleasure, without a table.

Accordingly I went to work; and here I must observe, that as reason is the substance and original of the mathematics, so, by stating and squaring every thing by reason, and by making the most rational judgment of things, every man may be, in time, master of every mechanic art. I had never handled a tool in my life, and yet in time, by labour, application, and contrivance, I found at last that I wanted nothing but I could have made it, especially if I had had tools; however, I made abundance of things even without tools, and some with no more tools than an adze and an hatchet, which perhaps were never made that way before, and that with infinite labour. For example; if I wanted a board, I had no other way but to cut down a tree, set it on an edge

before me, and hew it flat on either fide with my axe, till I had brought it to be as thin as a plank, and then dub it fineoth with my adze; it is true, by this method I could make but one board out of a whole tree; but this I had no remedy for but patience, any more than I had for the prodigious deal of time and labour which it took me up to make a plank or board; but my time or labour was little worth, and so it was as well employed one way as another.

However, I made me a table and a chair, as I obferved before, in the first place, and this I did out of the short pieces of boards I brought on my raft from the ship; but when I had wrought out some boards, I made large shelves of the breadth of a foot and an half, one over another, all along one side of my cave, to lay my tools, nails, and fron-work on; and, in a word, to separate every thing at large in their places, that I might eaship come at them: also I drove pieces into the rock, to hang my guns, and all things that would hang up.

By these means my care looked like a general magazine of all necessary articles; and I had every thing so ready at hand, that it was a great pleasure to me to see all my goods in such order, and especially to find my

freck of all necessaries so great.

And now it was when I began to keep a journal of every day's employment; for, indeed, at first I was in too rouch hurry; and not only an hurry as to labour, but in too much discomposure of mind, and my journal would have been full of many dull things. For example; I must have faid thus: 'September she 30th, after I got 'to shore, and had escaped drowning, instead of being 'thankful to God for my deliverance, busing at first vo-'mited a great quantity of falt water, which was 'gotten into my stomach, and recovering myself a lattle, I ran about the thore, wringing my lands, and beating my heast and face, exclaiming at my misery, and crying out, I was undone, undone! till, tired and

faint, I was forced to lie down on the ground to repole, but durit not sleep for fear of heing devouced.

LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF

Some days after this, and after I had been on board
 the fhip, and had got all I could out of her, yet I

could not forbear getting up to the top of a little mountain, and looking out to fea, in hopes of feeing a ships

then fancy at a valt distance I spied a fail, pleased my-

felf with the hopes of it, and then after looking flea-

dily till I was almost blind, lose it quite, and fir down

and weep like a child, and thus increase my milery by

" my folly."

But having got over these things in some measure, and having settled my houshold surniture and habitation, made me a table and a chair, and all as handiome about me as I could, I began, I say, to keep my journal, of which I shall here give you the copy (though in it will be told all these particulars over again) as long as it lasted: for at length having no more ink, I was forced to leave it off.

JOURNAL.

SEPTEMBER 30th, 1659. I, poor miferable Robinson Cruloc, being shipwrecked during a deadful firm in the offing, came on those in this direct, unfortunate island, which I call, 'The island of Disparal the rest of the ship's company being drowned, and

myfelf almost dead.

All the rest of the day I spent in afflicting myself at the dismal circumstances I was brought to; wiz. I had neither food, house, cloaths, weapon, or place to sty to: and, in despair of any relief, saw nothing but death before me; either that I should be devoured by wild beats, murdered by savages, or starved to death for want of food. At the approach of night I slept in a tree for fear of wild-creatures, but slept soundly, though it rained all night.

October 1. In the morning, I faw, to my great furprize, the ship had floated with the high tide, and was driven on shore again much nearer the island; which, as it was some comfort on the one hand, (for seeing her sit,

apright

upright, and not broken in pieces, I hoped, if the wind abated, I might get on board, and get some food and necessaries out of her for my relief;) so, on the other hand, it renewed my grief at the loss of my comrades, who, I imagined, if we had all staid on board, might have faved the ship, or at least that they would not have been all drowned, as they were; and that, had the men been saved, we might, perhaps, have built us a boat out of the ruins of the ship, to have carried us to some other part of the world. I spent great part of this day, in peoplexing myself on these things; but at length, seeing the ship almost dry, I went upon the sand as near as I could, and then swam on board. This day also continued raining, though with no wind at all.

From the 1st of October to the 24th. All these days entirely spent in different voyages to get all I could out of the ship: which I brought on shore every tide of stood, upon rafts. Much rain also in these days, though with some intervals of fair weather; but, it seems, this

was the rainy feafon.

October 24. I overfet my raft, and all the goods I had got upon it; but being in shoal water, and the things chiefly heavy, I recovered many of them when the tide

was out.

Oftoper 25. It rained all night and all day, with fome gufts of wind; during which time the ship broke in pieces, the wind blowing a little harder than before, and was no more to be seen, except the wreck of her, and that only at low water. I spent this day in covering and securing the goods, which I had saved, that the

rain might not spoil them.

October 26. I walked about the flore almost allday, to find out a place to fix my habitation; greatly concerned to secure myself from any attack in the night, either from wild beafts or men. Towards night I fixed upon a proper place under a rock, and marked out a semicincle for my encampment, which I resolved to strengthen with a work, wall, or fortification, made of double piles, lined within with cable, and without with turs.

From the 26th to the 30th, I worked very hard to carrying all my goods to my new habitation, though fome part of the time it rained exceeding hard.

The 31st, in the morning, I went out into the island with my gun to fee for some food, and discover the country; when I killed a she-goat, and her kid followed me home, which I afterwards killed alto, because it would

November 1. I fet up my tent under a rock, and lay there for the first night, making it as large as I could, with frakes driven in to fwing my hammock upon.

November 2. I fet up all my chefts and boards, and the pieces of timber which made my raft, and with them formed a fence round me, a little within the place I had marked out for my fortification.

November 3. I went out with my gun, and killed two fowls like ducks, which were very good food. In

the afternoon, went to work to make me a table.

November 4. This morning I began to order my times of work, of going out with my gun, time of fleep, and time of diversion; viz. every morning I walked out with my gun for two or three hours, if it did not rain; then employed myself at work till about eleven o'clock; then eat what I had to live on; and from twelve till two I lay down to fleep, the weather being exceffive hot; and then in the evening to work again; the working part of this day and the next were wholly employed in making this table, for I was yet but a very forry workman, though time and necessity made me a compleat natural mechanic foon after, as I believe it would do any one elfe.

November 5. This day I went abroad with my gun and my dog, and killed a wild-cat; her fkin was pretty foft, but her flesh good for nothing: every creature I killed I took off the fkins and preserved them. Coming back by the fea-shore, I faw many forts of fea-fowls with which I was unacquainted; but was furprized, and almost trighted, with two or three feals, which, while I was gazing at, not well knowing what they were, got into the fea, and escaped me for that time.

November 6. After my morning walk, I went to work with my table again, and finished it, though not to my liking: nor was it long before I learned to

November 7. Now it began to be fettled fair weather. The 7th, 8th, 9th, 10th, and part of the 12th, (for the 11th was Sunday, according to my reckoning) I took wholly up to make me a chair, and with fomedifficulty brought it to a tolerable shape, but never to please me; and even in the making I pulled it to pieces feveral times. Note. I toon neglected keeping Sundays; for omitting my mark for them on my polt, I forgot which

November 13. This day it rained, which refreshed me exceedingly, and cooled the earth; but it was accompanied with terrible thunder and lightning, which frightened me dreadfully for fear of my powder. As foon as it was over, I refolved to feparate my stock of powder into as many little parcels as possible, that it

might not be in danger.

November 14, 15, 16. Thefe three days I fpent in making little fourre chefts, or boxes, which might hold about a pound, or two pounds at most, of powder; and fo putting the powder in, I stowed it in places, as secure and remote from one another as possible. On one of these three days I killed a large bird that was good to

eat, but I knew not what to call it.

November 17. This day I began to dig behind my tent into the rock, to make room for my farther conveniency. Note. Three things I wanted exceedingly for this work, viz. a pick-axe, a shovel, and a wheelbarrow or basket : so I defisted from my work, and began to confider how to fupply that want, and make me fome tools. As for the pick-axe, I made use of the iron-crows, which were proper enough, though heavy; but the next thing was a shovel or spade; this was so absolutely neceffary, that indeed I could do nothing effectually without it; but what kind of one to make, I knew not.

November 18. The next day, in fearthing the woods, I found H 2

I found a tree of that wood, or like it, which in the Brazils they call the iron-tree, for it's exceeding hardness of this, with great labour, and almost spoiling my axe. I cut a piece, and brought it home with great difficulty.

for it was exceeding heavy.

The excessive hardness of the wood, and having no other way, made me a long while upon this machine; for I worked it effectually, by little and little, into the form of a shovel or spade, the handles exactly shaped like ours in England, only that the broad part, having no iron shod upon it at bottom, it would not last me solong; showever, it served well enough for the uses which I had occasion to put it to: but never was a shovel, I believe,

made after that fashion, or so long making.

I was ftill dencient, for I wanted a basket or a wheel-barrow; a basket I could not make by any means, having no such things as twigs that would bend to make wicker-ware, at least none yet found out; and, as to the wheelbarrow, I fancied I could make all but the wheel; but that I had no notion of, neither did I know how to go about it; besides, I had no possible way to make iron gudgeons for the spindle or axis of the wheel to run in; so I gave it over; and, for carrying away the earth which I dug out of the cave, I made me a convenience like an hod, which the labourers carry mortar in when they serve the bricklayers.

This was not fo difficult to me as making the shovel; and yet this, and the shovel, and the attempt which I made in vain to make a wheelbarrow, took me up no less than four days; I mean always, excepting my morning's walk with my gun, which I feldom failed; and very seldom failed also of bringing home something fit

to eat.

November 23. My other work having flood fill, because of my making these tools, when they were simisfied I went on; and working every day as my strength and time allowed, I spent eighteen days entirely in widening and deepening my cave, that it might hold my goods commodiously.

Note.

Note. During all this time I worked to make this room or cave spacious enough to accommodate me as a warehouse or magazine, a kitchen, a dining-room, and a cellar; as for a lodging, I kept to the tent, except that fometimes in the wet feafon of the year, it rained fo hard, that I could not keep myfelf dry; which caufed me afterwards to cover all my place withinmy pale with long poles in the form of rafters, leaning against the rock; and loading them with flags, and large leaves of trees, like a thatch.

December 10. I began now to think my cave or vault finished, when on a sudden (it seems I had made it too large) a great quantity of earth fell down from the top and one fide; fo much, that in fhort it frightened me, and not without reason too; for if I had been under it, I had never wanted a grave-digger; upon this difafter I had a great deal of work to do over again; for I had the loofe earth to carry out; and, which was of more importance, I had the cieling to prop up, to that I might be fure no more would come down.

December 11. This day I went to work with it accordingly, and got two thoars or posts, pitched upright to the top, with two pieces of board across over each post; this I finished the next day; and setting more posts up with boards, in about a week more I had the roof fecured, and the posts, franding in rows, ferved me

for partitions to part off my house.

December 17. From this day to the 20th, I placed shelves, and knocked up nails in the posts, to hang every thing up that could be hung up; and now I began to be

in fome order within doors.

December 20. Now I carried every thing into the cave, and began to furnish my house, and fet up some pieces of board like a dreffer, to order my victuals upon; but board began to be very scarce with me: also I made

December 24. Much rain all night and all day; no

Stirring cut.

December 25. Rain all day.

December H 2

than before, and pleasanter.

December 27. Killed a young goat, and lamed another, fo that I catched it, and led it home in a firing; when I had it home, I bound and fplintered up it's leg, which was broke. - N. B. I took such care of it, that it lived, and the leg grew well, and as firong as ever; but by nurfing it fo long, it grew tame, and fed upon the little green at my door, and would not go away. This was the first time that I entertained a thought of breedmy powder and that was all frent.

December 28, 29, 30. Great heats, and no breeze; fo that there was no ftirring abroad, except in the evening for food. This time I spent in putting all my

things in order within doors.

January 1, 1660. Very hot still; but I went abroad carly and late, with my gun, and lay still in the middle of the day: this evening, going farther into the vallies which lay towards the centre of the island, I found there was plenty of goats, though exceeding thy, and hard to come at; however, I resolved to try if I could not bring my dog to hunt them down.

January 2. Accordingly, the next day I went out with my dog, and fet him upon the goats; but I was mistaken, for they all faced about upon the dog, and he knew his danger toowell, for he would not come near them.

January 3. I began my fence or wall; which, being still jealous of my being attacked by somebody, I

refolved to make very thick and itrong.

N. B. This wall being described before, I purposely omit what was faid in the Journal: it is fufficient to observe, that I was no less time than from the 3d of January to the 14th of April, working, finishing, and perfecting this wall, though it was no more than about twenty-four yards in length, being an half circle from one place in the rock to another place about eight yards from it; the door of the cave being in the centre behind it.

All this time I worked very hard, the rains hindering me many days, nay, fometimes weeks together: but I thought I fhould never be perfectly fecure till this wall was finished: and it is feared credible what inexprefible liabour every thing was done with, especially the bringing piles out of the wood, and driving them into the ground; for I made them much bigger than I needed to have done.

When this wall was finished, and the outside double fenced with a turf-wall, raised up close to it, I persuaded myself, that it any people were to come assore there, they would not perceive any thing like an habitation; and it is very well I did so, as may be observed hereaster

upon a very remarkable occasion.

During this time, I went into the woods for game every day, when the rain permitted me, and made frequent discoveries in these walks of something or other to my advantage; particularly, I found a kind of wild pigeons, which build not as wood-pigeons in a tree, but taking some young ones, I endeavoured to breed them up tame, and did so; but when they grew older, they flew all away, which perhaps was at first for want of feeding them, for I had nothing to give them; however, I frequently found their nests, and got their young ones, which were good to eat.

And now, in the management of my houshold affairs, I found mylelf wanting in many things, which I thought at first it was impossible for me to make, and indeed so it was: for instance, I could never make a cask to be hooped; I had a small rundlet or two, as I observed before, but I could never arrive to the capacity of making one of them, though I ipent many weeks about it; I could neither put in the heads, nor join the staves to true to one another, as to make them held water; so I give

that also over.

In the next place, I was at a great loss for candles; so that as foon as it was dark, which was generally by feven o'clock, I was obliged to go to bed. I remembered

to LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF

bered the lump of bees-wax with which I made candle in my African adventure; but I had none of that now. The only remedy I had was, that when I killed a goat, I made tallow of the far, and with a little diffi made at clay, which I baked in the fun, to which I added a wick of fome oakum, I made me a lamp; and this furnified me with light, though not a clear fleady light like a candle.

In the midst of my labours it happened, that, rummaging my things, I found a little bag, which, as I hinted before, had been filled with corn-for feeding poutry, not for this voyage, but before, as I suppose, when the ship came from Lisbon; what little remainder of could be been in the bag was all devoured by the rats, and I saw nothing in the bag but husks and dust; and being willing to have the bag for some other use, (I think it was to put powder in, when I divided it for fear of the lightning, or some such use) I shook the husks of comout of it on one side of my fortification under the rock

It was a little before the great rains just now mentioned, that I threw this fust away, taking no notice of any thing, and note for much as remembering that I had thrown any thing there; when about a month after, or thereabouts, I saw some sew stalks of something green shooting upon the ground, which I sancied might be some plant. I had not seen; but I was surprized, and perfectly associated, when, after a little longer time, I saw about ten or twelve cars come out, which were perfect green barley, of the same kind as our European, nay, as our English barley.

It is impossible to express the astonishment and consistent of my thoughts on this occasion: I had hitherto acted upon no religious foundation at all; indeed I had very few notions of religion in my head, nor had entertained any sense of any thing that had befallen me, otherwise than as a chance, or, as we lightly say, what pleases God; without so much as enquiring into the end of Providence in these things, or his ordering and govern-

ing all events in the world: but after I faw harley grow there, in a climate which I knew was not proper for corn, and especially that I knew not how it came there, it startled me strangely, and I began to suggest that God had miraculously caused this grain to grow without any help of feed fown, and that it was so directed, purely for my fustenance in that wild and miserable place.

This reflection to affected me, that it brought tears from my eyes, and I began to bless mylelf, that such a prodigy of Nature thould happen upon my account; and this was the more strange to me, because I saw near it till, all along by the fide of the rock, some other firegoing stalks, which proved to be stalks of rice, and which I knew, because I had seen it grow in Africa

when I was afhore there.

I not only thought these the pure productions of Providence for my support; but, not doubting that there was no more in the place, I went all over that part of the Island where I had been before, looking in every corner, and under every rock, to see for more of it, but I could not find any; at last it occurred to my thoughts, that I had shaken the bag of chickens meat out in that place, and the wonder began to cease; and I must confels, my religious thankfulness to God's providence began to abate too, upon discovering that all this was nothing but what was common; though I ought to have been as thankful for fo ferange and unforeseen an incident as if it had been miraculous; for it was really the work of Providence, as to me, that fhould order or appoint, that ten or twelve grains of corn fhould remain unspoiled, (when the rats had destroyed all the reft:) as if it had been dropped from Heaven: as also that I should throw it out into that particular place, where, being in the shade of an high rock, it sprang up immediately; whereas, had I thrown it any where elie at that time, it might have been burnt and deltroyed.

I carefully faved the ears of this corn, you may be fure, in their featon, which was about the end of June: and, laying them up carefully, I relolved to fow them again, hoping they might, in proper time, produce id fufficient quantity to supply me with bread: but it we not till the fourth year that I would allow myself to least grain of this corn to eat, and even then but fpingly. I lost all that I fowed the first season, by ingly. I lost all that I fowed the first season, by ingly if alon, fo that it never came up at all, at least body feason, so that it never came up at all, at least body feason, fo that it never came up at all, at least body feason, so that it never came up at all, at least body feason, so that it never came up at all, at least body feason, so that it never came up at all, at least body feason, so that it never came up at all, at least body feason, so that it never came up at all, at least body feason, so that it never came up at all, at least body feason, so the season is not season to season the season to season the season that it is not made this unfortunate.

Befides this barley, there were twenty or thirty stuffed of rice, which I preserved with the same care, alor whole use was of the same kind, or to the same purposity viz. to make me bread, or rather food; for I for d ways to cook it up without baking, though I did that also after some time. But to return to my Journal.

I worked excessive hard three or four months, to give my wall done; and the 14th of April I closed it were contriving to get within, not by a door, but by a laddent that there might be no fign on the outside of manifestion.

April 16. I finished the ladder; fo I went up with the ladder to the top, and then pulled it up after me, and let it down on the inside: this was a compleat inclosure to me; for within I had room enough, and nothing coule come at me from without, unless it could first mound my wall.

The very next day after this wall was finished, I has almost had all my labour overthrown at once, and my felf killed. The case was thus: as I was built bent my tent, just at the entrance into my cave, I was terriby frightened with a most dreadful surprizing thing indeed of for all on a sudden I found the earth came tumbling down from the roof of my cave, and from the edge the hill over my head; and two of the posts I had up in the cave cracked in a tremendous manner: I was heartly frightened, but formed no judgment of will heartly frightened, but formed no judgment of will really was the cause; only thinking that the top of a cave was falling in, as some of it had done before; and for fear I should be buried in it, I ran forwards to me

adder:

elder; and, not thinking mylelf fafe there neither, I bt over my wall for fear of the pieces of the hill which expected might roll down upon me. I no fooner fet feet on the ground, than I plainly faw it was a ter-He earthquake; for the ground I flood on shook three mes, at about eight minutes distance, with three fuch locks as would have overturned the ftrongest building at could be supposed to have stood upon the earth; Id a great piece of the top of the rock, which flood about If a mile from me next the sea, fell down with such aterrible noise, as I never heard in all my life; I perlived also the sea was put into violent motion by it; I d I believe the shocks were stronger under the water an on the Ifland.

I was fo amazed at this phenomenon, having never Sit the like, or discoursed with any one that had, that was like one dead or stupished; and the motion of the derth made me exceeding fick, but the noise of the falmg of the rock awaked me, as it were; and rouzing t from the stupished condition I was in, filled me with eror, and I thought of nothing then but the hill an ling upon my tent and all my houshold goods, and buing all at once; and this funk my very foul within me

ou econd time.

After the third shock was over, and I felt no more fome time, I began to take courage; and yet I had hat heart enough to get over my wall again, for fear of m ing buried alive: but full fat upon the ground, greatly t down, and disconsolate, not knowing what to do. ible this while I had not the least ferious religious ed bught, nothing but the common- Lord have mercy ir pon me!' and when was it over, that went

av too,

While I fat thus, I found the atmosphere overcast, will it grew cloudy, as if it would rain; and, in lefs In half an hour, it blew a most dreadful huricane of n nd; the fea was all on a fudden covered with foam and froth, the shore with the breach of the water, and the mes were torn up by the roots. This continued about three'

three hours, when it began to abate; and in two hour

All this while I fat upon the ground, very much terrified and dejected, when on a fudden it occurred to my mind that thefe winds and rains being the confequence of the carthquake, the earthquake itself was spent and over, and I might venture into my cave again. With this thought my spirits began to revive, and the rain helping also to periuade me, I went in and fat me down in my tent; but the rain was so vicleut, that my tent was ready to be beaten down with it, and I was forced to go into my cave, though very much afraid and unearly for fear it should fall on my head.

This violent rain forced me to a new work, v.a. to cut a hole through my new fortification, like a link, to let off the water. After I had been in my cave, I found still more shocks of the carthquake follow, I began to be more composed; and, to support my spirits, which indeed wanted it very much, I went to my little store, and took a small quantity of rum, which I did then and at other times when I thought it effectially necessary, knowing I could have no more after that was gone.

It continued raining all that night, and great part of the next day, so that I could not fir abroad: but my mind being more composed, I began to consider what I had best to do; thinking, that if the island was subject to these earthquakes, there would be no living for me in a cave, but I must consider of building me ione little hut in an open place, which I naight furround with a wall, as I had done here, and thereby make myielf secure from wild beafts or men; concluding, if I staid where I was, I should certainly, one time or other, be buried alive.

In confequence of these thoughts, I resolved to move my tent from the place where it stood, which was just under the hanging precipice of the hill, and which, if it should be shaken again, would certainly fall upon my tent. And I spent the two next days, being the 19th and 20th of April, in contriving where, and how to remove my habitation.

The fear of being fivallowed up alive greatly difturbed my mind, so that I had very little refreshment from sleep; the apprehensions of lying abroad without any sence were almost equal to it; but still, when I looked about, and saw how every thing was put in order, how well concealed I was, and how safe from danger, it made me unwilling to remove.

In the mean time it occurred to me, that it would require a vaft deal of time to do this, and that I must be contented to run the hazard where I was, till I had formed a camp for mylelf, and had fecured it so as to remove to it. With this resolution I composed myself for a time, and then resolved to go to work with all speed to build me a wall with piles, cables, &c. in a circle, as before, and set my tent up in it when it was finished; but that I would venture to stay where I was, till it was simished and fit to remove to. This was the 2 rft.

April 22. The next morning I began to confider of means to put this relolve into execution: but I was at a great loss about my tools: I had three large axes, and abundance of hatchets, (for we carried the hatchets for traffic with the Indians;) but with much chopping and cutting knotty hard wood, they were all full of notches, and dull; and though I had a grindftone, I could not turn it and grind my tools too. This cost me as much thought as a flatelinan would have befrowed upon a grand point of politics, or a judge upon the life and death of a man. At length I contrived a wheel with a ftring to turn it with my foot, that I might have both my hands at liberty. Note, I had not feen any fuch thing in England, or at least to take notice how it was done; though fince, I have observed it was very common there; befides that, my grindstone was very large and heavy. This machine cost me a full week's work to bring it to perfection.

April 28, 29. These two whole days I took up in grinding my tools, my machine for turning my grind-

Itone performing very well.

April 30. Having perceived my bread had been low a great while, I now took a furvey of it, and reduced my-

felf to one biscuit-cake a-day."

May I. In the morning, looking towards the fea-fide, the tide being low, I faw fomething lie on the fhore bigger than ordinary, and it looked like a cafk. When I came to it, I found a finall barrel, and two or three pieces of the wreck of the ship, which were driven on shore by the late huricane; and looking towards the wreck it-felf, I thought it seemed to lie higher out of the water than it used to do. I examined the barrel which was driven on shore, and found it was a barrel of gun-powder, but it had taken water, and the powder was caked as hard as a stone: however, I rolled it farther on the shore for the present, and went upon the sands, as near as I could to the wreck of the ship, to look for more.

When I came to the ship, I found it strangely removed. The fore-caftle, which lay before buried in fand, was heaved up at least fix feet; and the stern, which was broken to pieces, and parted from the rell by the force of the fea, foon after I had left rummaging of her, was toffed as it were up, and caft on one fide; and the fand was thrown to high on that fide next the frem, that though there was a great place of water before, fo that I could not come within a quarter of a mile of the wreck without fwimming, I could now walk quite up to her when the tide was out: I was furprized with this at first, but soon concluded it must be done by the carthquake; and as by this violence the ship was more broken open than formerly, so many things came daily on thore which the fea had loofened, and which the winds and water rolled by degrees to

This wholly diverted my thoughts from the defign of removing my habitation; and I busted myself that day especially, in searching whether I could make any way into the ship; but I sound nothing was to be expected of that kind, for that all the inside of the ship was choaked up with land; however, as I had learned not to despair

of any thing, I refolved to pull every thing to pieces that I could of the ship, concluding, that whatever I could get from her would be of some use or other to me.

May 3. I began with my faw, and cut a piece of a beam through, which I thought held fome of the upper part, or quarter-deck together; and when I had cut it through, I cleared away the fand as well as I could, from the fide which lay highest; but the tide coming in,

I was obliged to give ever for that time.

May 4. I went a filhing, but caught not one fish that I durit eat of, till I was weary of my sport; when, just going to leave off, I caught a young delphin. I had made me a long line of some rope-yarn, but I had no hooks: yet I frequently caught fish enough, as much as I cared to eat; all which I dried in the fun, and eat them dry.

May 5. Worked on the wreck, cut another beam afunder, and brought three great planks off from the decks, which I tied together, and made fwim on shore

when the tide of flood came on.

May 6. Worked on the wreck, got feveral iron bolts out of her; and other pieces of iron-work; worked very hard, came home much tired, and had thoughts of

giving it over

May 7. Went to the wreck again, with an intent not to work; but found the weight of the wreck had broken itself down, the beams being cut, that several pieces of the ship seemed to lie loose, and the inside of the hold lay so open, that I could see into it, but it was almost full of water and fand.

May 8. Went to the wreck, and carried an iron-crow to wrench up the deck, which lay now quite clear of the water or land; I wrenched open two planks, and brought them on shore also with the tide. I left the iron-crow

in the wreck for the next day.

May 9. Went to the wreck, and with the crow made way into the body of the wreck, and felt feveral casks, and loosened them with the crow, but could not head. break them up; I lelt also a roll of English lead, and could stir it, but it was too neavy to move.

May 19, 11, 12, 13, 14. Went every day to the wreck, and got a great many pieces of timber and boards, or planks, and two or three hundred weight of iron.

May 15. I carried two hatchets, to try if I could not cut a piece off the roll of lead, by placing the edge of one hatchet against the lead, and driving with the other; but as it lay about a foot and an half in the water, I could not make any blow to drive the hatchet.

May 16. It had blowed hard in the night, and the wreck appeared more broken by the force of the water; but I fraid to long in the woods to get pigeons for food, that the tide prevented me going to the wreck that day.

May 17. I saw some pieces of the wreck blown on shore at a great distance, two miles off, and resolved to see what they were, but sound it was a piece of the head,

and too heavy for me to bring away.

May 24. From the 17th to this day, I worked on the wreck, and with hard labour loofened fome things fo much with the crow, that on the first flowing tide several casks floated out, and two of the seamen's thesis; but the wind blowing from the shore, nothing came to land that day except some pieces of timber, and an hogshead which had some Brazil pork in it, but the last water

and the fand had ipoiled it.

I continued this work every day from the 24th of May to the 15th of June, except the time necessary to get food, which I always appointed, during this part of my employment, to be when the tide was up, that I might be ready when it was ebbed out to attend the wreck. By this time I had gotten timber and plank, and iron-work enough to have built a good boat, if I had known how; as also at different times, and in feveral pieces, near a hundred weight of the sheet lead.

June 16. Going down to the fea-fide I found a large

tortoife or turtle; this was the first I had seen; which, it seems, was only my missfortune, not any defect of the place, or scarcity; for had I happened to be on the other side of the island, I might have had hundreds of them every day, as I afterwards found, though perhaps I might have paid dear for them.

June 17. I spent in cooking the turtle: I found in her threescore eggs; and her flesh was to me, at that time, the most tayoury and pleasant I ever tasked in my life, having had no slesh, but of goats and fowls, since I

landed in this horrible place.

June 18. Raining all the day, I flaid within, I thought at this time the rain felt cold, and I was fore-thing chilly, which I knew was not usual in that latitude.

June 19. Very ill, and fluvering, as if the weather

had been cold,

June 20. No rest all night; violent pains in my head,

and feverifh.

June 21. Very ill, frighted almost to death with the apprehensions of my sad condition, in being sick, and having no help: prayed to God, for the first time since the storm off Hall, but scarce knew what I said, or why; my thoughts being all consuled.

June 22. A little better, but under dreadful appre-

henfions.

June 23. Very bad again; cold and shivering, attended with a violent head-ach.

June 24. Much better.

June 25. An ague very violent; the fit held me feveral hours, cold fit and hot, with faint iweats

June 26. Better; and having no victuals to eat, took my gun, but found myfelf very weak; however, I killed a the goat, and with much difficulty got it home, broiled iome of it, and eat; I would fain have flewed it, and made fome broth, but had no convenience for that purpose.

June 27. The ague returned again fo violent, that I

lay in bed all day, and neither eat nor drank. I was ready to perifh with thirft, and so weak, I had not strength to stand up, or get myself any water to drink; prayed to God again, but was light headed; and when I was not I was soignerant, that I knew not what to say; only I lay and cried—'Lord, look upon me! Lord, pirv me! Lord 'have mercy upon me!' I suppose I did nothing die for two or three hours, till the fit wearing off, I fell alleen, and till not awake till the night was far advanced. When I awoke, I found myself much refreshed, but weak and exceeding thirsty; however, as I had no water in my whole habitation, I was forced to lie till morning, and went to sleep again; in this second sleep, I had the following terrible dream.

I thought I was fitting on the ground, on the outfide of my wall, at the fame foot where I fat when the form blew after the earthquake, and that I faw a man defend from a black cloud, in a bright flame of fire, and light upon the ground: he was all over as bright as a flame, so that I could but just bear to look towards him; his countenance was too dreadful for words to deferibe. When he stepped on the ground, I thought the earth trembled, just as it had done before in the earthquake; and the atmosphere looked, to my apprehension, as if it had been filled with slashes of fire.

He was no sooner landed upon the earth, but he moved towards me, with a long spear or weapon in his hand as if defigning to kill me; when he came to a rising ground, at some distance, he spoke to me, or I heard a voice so terrible, that it is impossible to express the terror of it: all that I can say I understood was this— Seeing all these things have not brought thee to repentance, now thou shalt die. At which words I thought he listed up the spear that was in his hand to kill me.

No one that shall ever read this account will expect I should be able to describe the horiors of my soul at this terrible vision; I mean, that even while it was a dream, I even dreamed of those horrors; nor is it any

more peffible to deferibe the impression that remained upon my mind, when I awaked and found it was but a

I had, alas! no divine knowledge; what I had received by the good infruction of my father was then worn out by an uninterrupted feries, for eight years, of fea-faring wickedness, and a confiant conversation with none but fuch as were, like myfelf, wicked and prophane to the last degree. I do not remember that I had, in a mat time, one thought that fo much as tended either to looking upwards towards God, or inwards towards a reflection upon my own ways ; but a certain flupidity of foul, without defire of good, or conference of evil, had entirely overwhelmed me, and I was all that the most hardened, unthinking, wicked creature, among our cemmon failors, can be furposed to be; and having the least fense of the fear of God in dangers, or of thankfulness

to God in deliverances.

In the relation of what is already past of my story, this will be the more eafily believed, when I add, that through all the variety of miseries that had to this day befallen me, I never had so much as one thought of it's being the hand of God, or that it was a just puniffment for my fins: my rebellious behaviour against my father, or my prefent fins, which were great; or to much as a punishment for the general course of my wicked life. When I was on the desperate expedition on the defart shores of Africa, I never had so much as ore thought of what would become of me, or one with to God to direct me whither I should go, or to keep me from the danger which apparently furrounded me, as well from voracious creatures, as cruel favages : but I was merely thoughtless of God, or a Providence; I acted like a mere brute, from the principles of nature, and by the dictates of common fense only; and, indeed,

When I was delivered and taken up at fea by the Portugal captain, well used, and dealt justly and honourably with, as well as charitably, I had not the least

LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF

thankfulnefs in my thoughts: when again I was ship-wrecked, ruined, and in danger of drowning on this island, I was as far from remorte, or looking on it as a judgment; I only faid to myfelf often, that I was an unfortunate dog, and born to be always miterable.

It is true, when I got on shore first here, and sound all my ship's crew drowned, and myself spared, I was surprized with a kind of extasy, and some transports of sold which, had the grace of God affisted, might have come up to true thankfulness; but it ended where it began, in a mere common slight of joy; or, as I may say, being glad I was alive, without the least reflection upon the distinguishing goodness of the hand which had preserved me, and had singled me out to be preserved, when all the rest were destroyed; or an enquiry why Providence had been thus merciful to me: even just the same common fort of joy which seamen generally have, after they have got sate ashore from shipwreck, all which they drown in the next bowl of punch, and forget almest as soon as it is over; and all the rest of my life was like it.

Even when I was afterwards, on due confideration, made fensible of my condition, in what manner I was cast on this dreadful place, out of the reach of human kind, out of all hope of relief or prospect of redemption, as ioon as I saw a probability of living, and that I should not starve and perish for hunger, all the sense of my affliction wore off, and I began to be very easy, applied myself to the works proper for my preservation and supply, and was far enough from being afflicted at my condition, as a judgment from Heaven, or as the hand of God against me: these were thoughts which very feldom entered into my head.

The growing up of the corn, as hath been observed in my journal, had at first some little influence upon me, and began to affest me with seriousness, as long as I thought it had something miraculous in it; but as soon as that part of the thought was removed, all the impression which was raised from it entirely wore off.

E.ven

Even the earthquake, though nothing could be more terrible in it's nature, or more immediately directing to the myrible. Power which alone produces fuch things; yet no fooner was the first firight over, but the impression it had made went off allo. I had no more sense of God, or his judgment, much less of the present affliction of my circumstances being from his hand, than if I had been in the most prosperous condition of my life.

But now, when I began to be fick, and a could deliberate view of the miteries of death came to prace it-felf before me; when my siprits began to fink under the burden of a ftrong diffemper, and nature was exhaufted with the violence of the fever; confcience, that had flept fo long, began to awake, and I could not avoid reproaching myfelf with my paft life, in which I had fo evidently, by uncommon wickedness, provoked the juffice of God to lay me under uncommon strokes, and

to deal with me in lo vindictive a manner.

There reflections oppressed me from the second or third day of my difference, and in a violence, as well of the fever as of the dreadful reproaches of my confcience, extorted some words from me, like praying to God, though I cannot fay they were either a prayer attended with defires, or with hopes: it was rather the voice of mere fright and diffress; my thoughts were confused, the convictions great upon my mind, and the horror of dying in such a miserable condition, raised vapours into my head with the mere apprehensions; and, in thele larries of my foul, I knew not what my tongue might express; but it was rather exclamation, such as- Lord! what a miferable creature am I! ' fhould be fick, I shall certainly die for want of help, and what will become of me! Then the tears burit from my eyes, and I could fay no more for fome

In this interval, the good advice of my father came to my mind, and prefently his prediction, which I mentioned in the beginning of this flory; viz. that if I did take this foolish step, God would not bless me, and I

4 LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF

in my recovery. 'Now,' faid I, aloud, 'my dear father's words are come to pais: God's justice has ' overtaken me, and I have none to help or hear me. · I rejected the voice of Providence which had mercifully put me in a posture or state of life wherein I might have been happy or early; but I would neither fee it myfelf, nor learn to know the bleffing of it from my parents; I left them to mourn over my folv, and how I am left to mourn under the confequences of it. I refused their help and affistance, who would have introduced me into the world, and would have made every thing easy to me; and now I have difficulties to ftruggle with, too great for even nature itself to support, and no affistance, no help, ono comfort, no advice!' Then I cried out- Lord, be my help, for I am in great diffres!"

This was the first prayer, if I may call it so, I had made for many years.—But to return to my

journal.

June 28. Having been formewhat refreshed by the fleep I had had, and the fit being entirely off, I got up, and though the fright and terror of my dream full hung heavy on my mind, yet I confidered that the fit of the ague would return again thenext day, and now was my time to get fomething to refresh and support myself when I should be ill. The first thing I did was to fill a large fquare case bottle with water, and fet it upon my table, in reach of my be;; and to take off the chill or aguish disposition of the water, I put about a quarter of a pint of run into it, and mixed them together; I then got a piece of the goat's flesh, and broiled it on the coals, but could eat very little; I walked about, but was very weak, and withal very heavy hearted from a fense of my miserable condition, dreading the return of my distemper the next day; at night I made my supper of three of the turtle's eggs, which I roalted in the ashes, and gat as we call it in the fhell; and this was the first kind

of food I ever asked God's bleffing to, even (as I could

After I had eaten, I tried to walk; but found myfelf to weak, that I could hardly carry the gun, (for I never went out without that;) fo I went but a little way, and fat down upon the ground, looking out to the fea, which was just before me, and very calm and fmooth. As I fat here, fome thoughts, fuch as the

What is the earth and fea, of which I have been fo much? Whence produced? And what am I, and all the other creatures, wild and tame, human and bru-

tal: whence are we?

Sure we are all made by fome fecret Power, who formed the earth and fea, the air and fky; and who

6 is that?

'It then followed most naturally-' It is God that has made them all!"—" Well, but," then it came on firongly; ' if God has made all these things, he guides and governs them all, and all things that concern them; for the Being that could make all things must certainly have power to guide and direct

fhem.

· If fo, nothing can happen in the great circuit of his works, either without his knowledge or appoint-

· And if nothing happens without his knowledge, he knows that I am here, and am in a dreadful condition;

and if nothing happens without his appointment, he

has appointed all this to befal me.'

Nothing occurred to my thoughts to contradict any of these conclusions; and therefore it rested upon me with the greater force, that it must needs be, that God had appointed all this to befal me; that I was brought to this milerable fituation by his direction; he having the fole power, not of me only, but of every thing that happened in the world. Immediately it followed-

Why has God done this to me? What have I done

to be thus used?

of LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF

My confeience prefently checked me in that enquiry, as if I had blaiphtemed; and methought it ipoke to me like a voice— Wretch! doft thou aik what thou half 'done? Look back upon a dreadful mispent life, and 'ask thyielf what thou half not done? Ask, why is it that thou were not long ago destroyed? Why were thou not drowned in Yarmouth Roads? killed in the light, when the ship was taken by the Sallee man of Africa? or drowned by the wild beafts on the coast of Africa? or drowned here, when all the crew persided 'but the felf? Dost thou ask what have I done?

I was firuck dumb with thefe reflections, as one aftonished, and had not a word to say; no, not to answer to myself: but rose up, pensive and sad, walked back to my retreat, and went up over my wall, as if I had been going to bed; but my thoughts were saily disturbed, and I had no inclination to sleep, so I sat down in my chair, and lighted my lamp, for it began to be dark. Now as the apprehensions of the return of my distemper terrified me very much, it occurred to my thought, that the Brazilians take no physic but their tobacco, for almost all distempers; and I had a piece of a roll of tobacco in one of the chests, which was quite cured, and some also that was green, and not then fit for use.

To this cheft I repaired, in which I found a cure both for foul and body; I opened the cheft, and immediately met with what I looked for, viz. the tobacco; and as the few books I had faved lay there too, I took out one of the bibles which I mentioned before, and which to this time I had not found either leiture or inclination to look into; I fay, I took it out, and brought both that

and the tobacco with me to the table.

What use to make of the tobacco I knew not, as to my difference, or whether it was good for it or no; but I tried several experiments with it, as if I was resolved it should hit one way or other: I first took a piece of a leaf, and chewed it in my mouth, which indeed almost shupified me, the tobacco being strong, and I not accoustomed to its use. I then took some, and steeped it

an hour or two in rum, resolving to take a dose of it when I lay down; and laftly, I burnt fome upon a pan of coals, and held my nofe-close over the imeak as long as I could bear it, as well for the heat, as to receive be-

neficial virtues from the plant.

After this operation I took up the bible, and began to read : but my head was too much diffurbed with the tobacco to bear reading, at least at that time having opened the book cafually, the fift wo di occurred to me were thefe- 'Call on me in trouble, and I will deliver, and thou fall

The words were very apt to my fituation, and made fome impression upon my thoughts at the time of reading them, though not fo much as they did afterwards; for, as for being delivered, the word had no affinity, as I may fay, to me; it was fo remote, so impossible, in my apprehension of things, that I said as the children of Ifrael did when they were promifed flesh to eat- Can God spread a table in the wilderness?'- Can God himfelf deliver me from this place?' And as it was not for many years that any hope appeared, this prevailed very often upon my thoughts: but, however, the words made a very great impression upon me, and I mused upon them very often. It grew now late, and the tobacco had, as I faid, affected my head fo much, that I was inclined to fleep; accordingly I left my lamp burning in the cave, left I should want any thing in the night, and went to bed; but before I lay down; I did what I never had done in all my life, I kneeled down and prayed to God to fulfil the promife to me, that if I called upon him in the day of trouble, he would deliver me. After my broken and imperfect prayer was over, I drank the rum wherein I had steeped the tobacco, which was fo frong and rank of the weed, that indeed I could scarce get it down. Immediately on this I went to bed, and foon found it flew up into my head violently; but I fell into a found theep, and waked no more till, by the fun, it must have been near three

08 LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF

o'clock in the afternoon the next day; nay, to this hour I am partly of the opinion that I flept all the next day and night, and till about three the day after; for otherwife I knew not how I fhould lofe a day out of my reckoning in the days of the week, as it appeared fone years after I had done; for if I had loft it by crofling all re-croffing the line, I should have lost more than a day in my account it was lost, and I never knew

I bat, however, one way or other, when I awaked I found delf exceedingly refreshed, and my sprits lively and cheer ul. When I got up I was stronger than I was the day before, and my stomach better; for I was hungry; and, in short, I had no fit the next day, but continued much altered for the better. This was

the 20th.

The 30th was my well day of course, and I went abroad with my gun, but did not care to travel too far. I killed a sea-fowl or two, something like a brandgoose, and brought them home, but was not very forward to eat them; so I eat some more of the turse's ward to eat them; so I eat some more of the turse's eggs, which were very good. This evening I renewed the medicine which I had supposed did me good the day before, viz. the tobacco steeped in rum; only I did not take so much as before, nor did I chew any of the leaf, or hold my head over the smook; however, I was not so well the next day, which was the first of July, as I hoped I should have been, for I had a return of the cold fit, but it was not much.

July 2. I renewed the medicine all the three ways, and dozed myself with it at first, doubling the quantity

which I drank.

July 3. I miffed the fit for good and all, though I did not recover my full firength for fome weeks after. While I was thus gathering firength, my thoughts ran exceedingly upon these words in the Scripture, 'I will deliver thee; and the impossibility of my deliverance lay much upon my mind, in bar of my ever expecting it: but as I was discouraging myself with such thoughts

it occurred to my mind, that I dwelt to much upon my deliverance from the main affliction, that I diffregarded the deliverance I had received; and I was, as it were, made to alk myfelf fuch questions as these; viz. 'Have I not been delivered, and wonderfully too, from sick ness? From the most distressed condition that could be, and that was so frightful to me? And what notice had I taken of it? Had I done my part? God had delivered me: but I had not glorified him.' That is to say, I had not owned and been thankul for that as a deliverance, and how could I expect greater deliverance!

These reflections greatly affected me, and I immediately kneeled down, and gave God thanks aloud for

my recovery from my fickness.

July 4. In the morning I took the bible: and opening if where the New Teltament commences, I began feriously to read it, and laid a restraint upon myself to read fome every morning and every night, not confining mylelf to the number of chapters, but to read as long as my thoughts should engage me. It was not long after when I fet ferfoufly to this work, but I found my heart more deeply and fincerely affected with the wickedness of my past life; the impression of my dream revived, and the words- All their things have not brought thee to repentance,' ran feriously in my thoughts: I was earnestly begging of God to give me repentance, when it happened providentially the very day, that, reading the Scripture, I came to their words-· He is exalted a Prince and a Saviour, to give repen-' tance, and to give remission:' I threw down the book and with my heart as well as my hands lifted up to heaven, in a kind of extacy of joy, I cried out aloud-' Jefus, thou fon of David! Jefus, thou exalted Prince and Saviour, give me repentance!'

'and saviour, give me rependance.'
This was the first time I could say, in the true sense of the words, that I prayed in all my life; for now I prayed with a sense of my condition, and with a true seripture view of hope, sounded on the encourage.

1 2

noo LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF nent of the word God; and from this time, I may fay, I began to have hope that God would

Now I began to confirme the words mentioned above - 'Call on me, and I will deliver thee,' in a different fense from what I had ever done before; for then I had no notion of any thing being called deliverance, but my being delivered from the captivity I was in; for though I was indeed at large in the place, yet the ifland was certainly a prison to me, and that in the worst sense of the word; but now I learned to take it in another fense. Now I looked back upon my past life with such horror, and my fins appearing to dreadful, my load of guilt that bere down all my comfort. As for my folitary life, it was nothing; I did not fo much as pray to be delivered from it, or think of it; it was all of no confideration in comparison of this; and I added this part here, to hint to whoever shall read it, that whenever they come to a true fende of things, they will find deliverance from fin a much greater bleising than deliverance from affliction.

But leaving this part, I return to my journal.

My condition began now to be, though not less miserable as to my way of living, yet much easier to my mind; and my thoughts being directed, by a constant reading the Scripture, and praying to God, to things of a higher nature, I had a great deal of comfort within, which till now I knew nothing of; also, as my health and strength returned, I determined to surnish myself with every thing I wanted, and make my way of living as regular and comfortable as I could.

From the 4th of July to the 14th, I was chiefly employed in walking about with my gun in my hand, though I could proceed no great diffance without intervals of reft, being from illnels so weekened, that I had very little strength left: indeed it is hardly to be imagined how low I was, and to what an imperfect state I was reduced. The application which I made use of,

was perfectly new, and perhaps what had never cured an ague before; neither can I recommend it to any one to

I learned from it, also, this in particular, that being came attended with forms and huricanes of wind; for as the rain which came in a dry feafon was always most accompanied with fuch florms, fo I found this rain was much more dangerous than the rain which fell in Septem-

I had been now in the ifland above ten months; and to be entirely taken from me; I family believed, that no human being had ever fet foot upon the place. Having now fecured my habitation, as I thought, fully to my mind, I had a great defire to make a more perfect discovery of the ifland, and to fee what other productions I might find of which I was at prefent unacquainted.

It was the 15th of July that I began to take a more particular furvey of the island itself; I went up the creek first, where, as hinted, I brought my rafts on shore. I found, after I came about two miles up, that the tide did not flow any higher, and that it was no more than a little brook of running water, and very fresh and good; but this being the dry feafon, there was hardly any water in some parts of it, at least not enough to run into any stream, so as it could be perceived.

On the bank of this brook I found many pleafant favannalis or meadows, plain, fmooth, and covered with grass; and on the rising parts of them next to the higher grounds, where the water, as it might be suppoled, never overflowed, I found a great deal of tobacco, green, and growing to a great and very firong flalk; there were various other plants with which I was unacquainted, and which might probably have some efficaci-

ous virtues, though to me unknown.

102 LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF

I fearched for the cashava root, of which the Indians in all that climate make their bread, but I could find none. I saw large plants of aloes, but did not then understand them; I saw several sugar-canes, but wild, and, for want of cultivation, imperied. I contented myself with these discoveries for this time, and cane back musing with myself what course I might take to know the virtue and goodness of any of the fruits or plants which I should discover, but could bring it to no conclusion; for, in short, I had made so little observation while I was in the Brazils, that I was unacquainted with the plants of the field; at least I knew very little that might serve me to any purpose at his time.

of my diffress

The next day, the 16th, I went the same way again; and, after going fomething farther than I had done the day before, I found the brook and the favannahs began to cease, and the country became more woody than before. In this part I found different fruits, and particularly melons upon the ground in great abundance, and grapes upon the trees; the vines had foread indeed over the trees, and the clutters of grapes were just now in their prime, very ripe and rich. This was a furprizing difcovery, and I was exceeding glad of them, but was warned by my experience to eat sparingly of them, remembering, that when I was alhore in Barbary, the eating of grapes killed feveral of our Englishmen who were flaves there, by throwing them into fluxes and fevers; but I found an excellent use for these grapes, and that was, to cure or dry them in the fun, and keep them as dried grapes or raifins are kept, which I thought would be, as indeed they were, as wholefome, and as agreeable to eat, when no grapes might be had.

I fpent all that evening there, which was the first time I had lain from home. When night came, I got up into a tree, where I slept well, and the next morning proceeded upon my discovery, travelling near four miles, as I might judge by the length of the valley, keeping full due north, with a ridge of hills on the south and north

At the end of this journey I came to an opening where the country, seemed to descend to the west; and a little spring of fresh water which issued out of the side of the hill by me, ran the other way, that is, due east; and the country appeared so fresh, so green, so sourching, every thing being in a state of beautiful verdure, that it looked

like a planted garden.

I defeended a little on the fide of the valley, furveying it with a fecret kind of pleafure to think this was all my own; that I was king and lotd of all this country indefeafibly, and had a right of possession; and, if I could convey it, I might have it in inheritance, as compleatly as any lord of a manor in England. I saw here abundance of cocoa, orange, lemon, and citron-trees; but all wild, and sew bearing any fruit; at least, not then; however, the green limes that I gathered were not only pleasant to eat, but very wholesome; and I mixed their juice afterwards with water, which made it very wholesome, and very cool and refreshing drink.

I found now I had business enough to gather and carry home; and resolved to lay up a store, as well of grapes as limes and lemons, to surnish myself for the wet sea-

ion, which I knew was approaching.

In order to do this, I gathered a great heap of grapes in one place, and a great parcel of limes and lemons in another place; and taking a few of each with me, I travelled homeward, and refolved to come ag im, and bring a bag or fack, or what I could make, to carry the reft home.

Accordingly, having spent three days in this journey, I came home, (so I must now call my tent, and my cave:) but, before I got thither, the grapes were spoiled; the richners of the fruit, and the weight of the juce, having broken them, and bruised them, they were good for little or nothing; as to the limes, they were good, but I could bring but few.

The next day, being the 19th, I went back, having made me two small bags to bring home my harvest; but I was surprized, when coming to my heap of grapes, which

which were fo rich and fine when I gathered them, I found them all spread abroad, trod to pieces, and dragged about, fome here, fome there, and abundance eater and devoured. By this I concluded, there were some wild creatures thereabouts, which had done this; but what they were I knew not.

However, as I found there was no laying them upon heaps, and no carrying them away in a fack, but that one way they would be defroyed, and the other they would be crushed with their own weight, I took another course; I gathered a large quantity of the grapes, and hung them upon the out-branches of the trees, that they might cure and dry in the fun; and as for the lines and lemons, I carried as many back as I could well

fland under.

When I came home from this journey, I contemplated with great pleafure on the fruitfulness of that valley, and the pleasantness of the situation, the security from froms on that fide of the water, and the wood; and concluded that I had pitched upon a place to fix my abode, which was by far the worst part of the country. Upon the whole, I began to think of removing my habitation, and to look out for a place equally fafe, as where I now was fituate, if possible, in that pleasant fruitful

part of the inland.

This thought ran long in my head, and I was exceeding fond of it for some time, the pleasantness of the place tempting me; but when I came to a nearer view of it, and to confider that I was now by the fea-fide, where it was at least possible that something might happen to my advantage, and that the fame ill-fate that brought me hither might bring some other unhappy wretches to the same place; and though it was scarce probable, that any fuch thing should ever happen, yet to inclose myself among the hills and woods, in the centre of the island, was to anticipate my bondage, and to render fuch an affair not only improbable, but impofisble; and that therefore I ought not by any means to remove.

However,

However, I was to pleafed with this place, that I spent much of my time there for the whole remaining part of the month of July: and though, upon second thoughts, I resolved, as above, not to remove; yet I built me a little kind of bower, and surrounded it at a distance with a very strong sence, being a double hedge, as high as I could reach, well staked and silled between with brush-wood; and here I lay very secure, sometimes two or three nights together, always going over it with a ladder as before; so that I fancied now I had my country house, and, my sea coast house. And this work took me up the beginning of August.

I had but newly finished my sence, and began to enjoy my labour, when the rains came on, and made me stick close to my first habitation; for though I had made me a tent like the other, with a piece of a sail, and spread it very well, yet I had not the shelter of an hill to keep me from storms, nor a cave behind me to retreat into when

the rains were extraordinary.

About the beginning of August, as I said, I had finished my bower, and began to enjoy myself. The third of August I found the grapes I had hung up were perietily dried, and indeed were excellent good raisins of the fun; so I began to take them down from the trees, and it was very happy that I did so; for the rains which followed would have spoiled them, and I had lost the best part of my winter-sood; for I had above two hundred large bunches of them. No sooner had I taken them all down, and carried most of them home to my cave, but it began to rain; and from thence, which was the 14th of August, it rained more or less every day, till the middle of October; and sometimes so violently, that I could not fir out of my cave for several days.

At this time I was much furprized with the increase of my family: I had been concerned for the loss of one of my cats, which ran away from me, and, as I thought, had been dead, and I heard no tale or tidings of her, till, to my assonithment, she came home about the end of Au-

guit,

106 LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF

gust, with three kittens. This was the more strange because, though I had killed a wild-cat, as I called it, with my gun, yet I thought it was quite a different kind of from our European cats; but I found the kittens were the same kind of house-breed like the old one; and both my cats being semales, I thought it very strange. But from these three cats, I afterwards came to be so pessed with them, that I was forced to kill them like vermin, or wild-beafts, and to drive them from my house as much as possible.

From the 14th of August to the 26th it rained inceffantly, so that I could not stir out. In this state of confinement I began to be straitened for food; but venturing out twice, I one day killed a goat; and the last day, which was the 26th, found a very large tortoise, which was a treat to me. And my food was regulated thus: I eat a bunch of raisins for my breakfast; a piece of the goat's stesh, or of the turtle, for my dinner, broiled, (for, to my great missfortune I had no vessel to boil or stew any thing;) and two or three of the turtle's eggs

for Supper.

During this confinement by the rain, I worked daily two or three hours at enlarging my cave; and, by degrees, worked it on towards one fide, till I came to the outfide of the hill, and made a door or way out, which came beyond my fence or wall; and fo I came in and out this way. But I was not perfectly eafy at lying fo open; for as I had managed myfelf before, I was in a perfect inclosure, whereas, now I thought I lay exposed; and yet I could not perceive, that there was any living thing to fear, the largest animal I had yet feel upon the island being a goat.

September 30. I was now come to the unhappy anniverlary of my landing; I cast up the notches on my

niverlary or my failing; I can up the flotted of post, and found I had been on those three hundred and fixty-five days. I kept this day as a folemn fast, setting it apart to religious exercise, prostrating myself to the ground with the most serious humiliation, confessing my-

ground with the moit ferrous numination, contening by felf to God, acknowledging his righteous judgment

upon me, and praying to him to have mercy on me, through Jefus Christ; and having not taffed the leaft refreshment for twelve hours, even till the going down of the fun, I then eat a bifeuit-cake and a bunch of grapes, and went to bed, finishing the day as I began it.

I had all this time observed no sabbath-day; for as at first I had no fense of religion upon my mind, I had after some time omitted to distinguish the weeks; by making a longer notch than ordinary for the fabbath-day, and io did not really know what any of the days were; but now having cast up the days above, I found I had been there a year; fo I divided it into weeks, and fet apart every feventh day for a fabbath; though I found at the end of my account I had loft a day or two of my reckoning.

A little after this, my ink began to fail me, in confequence of which I used it more sparingly, and wrote down only the most remarkable events of my life, without continuing a daily memorandum of other things.

The rainy feafon, and the dry feafon, began now to appear regular to me, and I learned to divide them to as to provide accordingly. But I bought all my experience before I had it; and what I am going to relate was one of the most discouraging experiments I had made. It has been observed, that I had faved the few ears of barley and rice which I had fo furprizingly found fpring up, as I thought, of themselves, and believe there were about thirty stalks of rice, and about twenty of barley; and now I thought it a proper time to fow it after the rains, the fun being in it's fouthern polition

Accordingly I dug up a piece of ground, as well as I could, with my wooden spade, and dividing it into two parts, I fowed my grain; but as I was fowing, it cafually occurred to my thoughts, that I would not fow it all at first, because I did not know when was the proper time for it; fo I fowed about two-thirds of the feeds,

leaving the remainder for a future time.

It was a great comfort to me afterwards that I did fo

108 LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF

for not one grain of that I fowed at this time came to any thing: for the dry months following, the earth having had no rain after the feed was fown, it had no moifture to affift it's growth, and never came up at all, till the wet feafon had come again, and then it grew as if it

had been newly fown.

Finding my first seed did not grow, which I easily imagined was by the drought, I sought for a moister piece of ground to make another trial in; and I dug up a piece near my new bower, and sowed the rest of my feed in February, a little before the vernal equinox; and this, having the rainy months of March and April to water it, sprung up very pleasantly, and yielded a very good crop; but having part of the seed left only, and not daring to sow all that I had yet, I had but a small quantity at last, my whole crop not amounting to above half a peck of each kind.

But by this experience I was made mafter of my bufiness, and knew exactly when the proper season was to fow; and that I might expect two seed-times, and two

harvests, every year.

While this corn was growing, I made a little discovery, which was of use to me afterwards. As soon as the rains were over, and the weather began to fettle, which was about the month of November, I made a vifit up the country to my bower, where, though I had not been some months, yet I found all things just as I left them. The circle, or double hedge that I had made, was not only firm and entire, but the stakes which I had cut off fome trees that grew thereabouts, were all thot out, and grown with long branches, as much as a willow-tree usually shoots the first year after lopping it's head. I could not tell what tree to call it, that these stakes were cut from. I was surprized, and yet very well pleafed, to fee the young trees grow; and I pruned them, and led them up to grow as much alike as I could; and it is fearce credible, how beautiful a figure they grew into in three years; fo that though the hedge made a circle of about twenty-five yards in diameter, yet

the trees, for fuch I might now call them, foon covered it; and it was a compleat shade, sufficient to lodge under all

the dry feafon.

This made me refolve to cut fome more stakes, and make me an hedge like this in a femi-circle round my wall, (I mean, that of my first dwelling) which I did; and, placing the trees or stakes in a double row, at above eight yards distance from my first fence, they grew prefantly, and were at first a fine cover to my habitation, and afterwards ferved for a defence also, as I shall obferve in it's order.

I found now, that the scasons of the year might generally be divided, not into fummer and winter, as in Europe; but into the rainy feafons, and the dry feafons,

which were generally thus-

Half Feb. All March Half April Half April All May Tune July Half August. Half August All September Half October Half October All Nov. Dec. Tan. Half Feb.

Rainy, the fun being then on or near the Equi-

Dry, the fun being then to the North of the line.

Rain, the fun being then come back.

Dry, the fun being then to the South of the line.

The rainy feafon fometimes held longer or fhorter, as the winds happened to blow; but this was the general observation I made. After I had found, by experience, the ill-confequence of being abroad in the rain, I took care to furnish myself with provisions beforehand, that I might VOL. I.

110 LIFE AND ADVENTURES OF

I might not be obliged to go out; and I fat within-doors

as much as possible during the wet months.

In this time I found much employment, (and very fuitable also to the time) for I faw great occasion of many things which I had no way to furnish myself with, but by hard labour and constant application; particularly, I tried many ways to make myfelf a basket; but all the twigs I could get for the purpose were so brittle, that they would not answer the purpose. It proved of excellent advantage to me now, that when I was a boy, I used to take great delight in standing at a basket-maker's in the town where my father lived, to fee them make their wicker-ware; and being, as boys ufually are, very officious to help, and a great observer of the manner how they worked those things, and fometimes lent an hand, I had by this means such full knowledge of the methods of it, that I wanted nothing but the materials; when it came into my mind, that the twigs of that tree from whence I cut my stakes that grew, might possibly be as tough as the fallows, and willows, and offers, in England; and I refolved to try.

Accordingly, the next day I went to my countryhouse, as I called it, and cutting some of the smaller twigs, I found them to my purpose as much as I could defire; whereupon, I came the next time prepared with an hatchet to cut down a quantity, which I foon found, for there was a great plenty of them; thele I fet up to dry within my circle or hedges; and when they were fit for use, I carried them to my cave; and here, during the next featon, I employed myfelf in making (as well as I could) a great many baskets, both to carry earth, and to carry or lay up any thing, as I had occasion: and though I did not finish them very handsomely, yet I made them fufficiently ferviceable for my purpole: and thus afterwards I took care never to be without them; and as my wicker-ware decayed, I made more; especially, I made strong deep baskets to place my corn in, instead of facks, when I should come to have any quantity of it.

Having maftered this difficulty, and employed much

tim

time about it, I exerted myfelf to fee, if possible, how to supply two wants. I had no vessels to hold any thing that was liquid, except two rundlets, which were almost full of rum, and some glass bottles, some of the common fize, and others which were case-bottles, square, for holding waters, spirits, &c. I had not for much as a pot to boil any thing in, except a great kettle which I saved out of the ship, and which was too big for such uses as I wanted, viz. to make broth, and stew a bit of meat by itself. The second thing I would willingly have had was a robacco-pipe, but it was impossible for me to make one; however, I found a contrivance for that too at last.

I employed myfelf in planting my fecond rows of stakes or piles, and in this wicker-work, all the summer, or dry season; when another business took me up more time than it could be imagined I could spare.

I mentioned before, that I had a great mind to fee the whole island, and that I had travelled up the brook, and to on to where I built my bower, and where I had an opening quite to the fea, on the other fide of the island. I now refolved to travel quite acrofs to the fea-shore on that fide: fo taking my gun and hatchet, and my dog, and a larger quantity of powder and shot than usual, with two biscuit-cakes and a great bunch of raisins in my pouch, for my ftore, I begann y journey. When I had passed the vale where my bower stood, as above, I came within view of the fea to the west; and it being a very clear day, I fairly descried land, whether an island or continent I could not tell; but it lay very high, extending from the W. to the W. S. W. at a very great distance: by my guess it could not be less than fifteen or twenty leagues off.

I could not tell what part of the world this 'might be, otherwise than that I knew it must be part of America; and, as I concluded by all my observations, must be near the Spanish dominions, and perhaps was all inhabited by savages, where, if I should have landed, I had been in a were condition than I was now; and, therefore, I ac-

10. 6

quielced

quiesced in the dispositions of Providence, which I began now to own, and to believe, ordered every thing for the best; I say, I contented myself with this, and lest disturbing my mind with fruitless wishes of farther discoveries.

Befides, after fome pause upon this affair, I considered, that if this land was the Spanish coast, I should certainly, one time or other, see some vessels pass or repais one way or other; but if not, then it was the savage coast between the Spanish country and Brazil, which were, indeed, inhabited by the worst of savages; for they are cannibals, or men-caters, and fail not to murder and devour all the human bodies that fall into their hands.

With these considerations I walked very leisurely forward. I found that side of the island where I now was much pleasanter than mine, the open or savannah sields sweet, adorned with slowers and grass, and full of very fine woods. I saw abundance of parrots, and willingly would I have caught one, if possible, to have kept it to be tame, and taught it to speak to me. I did, after some pains catch a young parrot; for I knocked it down with a stick, and having recovered it, I brought it home, but it was some years before I could make him speak. However, at last I taught him to call me by my name very samiliarly; but the accident that followed, though a trifle, will be very diverting in it's place.

I was exceedingly amufed with this Journey; I found in the low grounds hares, as I thought them to be, and foxes, but they differed greatly from all the other kinds I had met with; nor could I fatisfy myfelf to eat them, though I killed feveral: but I had no need to be venturous; for I was not in want of food, and of that which was very good too; especially these three forts, viz. goats, pigeons, and turtle or tortosie; which, added to my grapes, Leadenhall market could not have furnished a table better than I, in proportion to the company; and though my case was deplorable enough, yet I had great cause of thankfulnes, that I was not driven to any extremities for food; but had rather plenty, even to dainties.

I never travelled in this journey above two miles outright in a day, or thereabouts; but I took so many turns and returns, to see what discoveries I could make, that I came weary enough to the place where I resolved to sit down for all night; and then either reposed myself in a tree, or surrounded myself with a row of stakes set upright in the ground, either from one tree to another, or so as no wild creature could come at me without waking me.

As foon as I came to the sea-shore, I was surprized to see that I had taken up my lot on the worst side of the island; for here indeed the shore was covered with innumerable turtles, whereas, on the other side, I had found but three in a year and a half. Here was also an infinite number of sowls of many kinds, some of which I had not seen before, and many of them very good to eat: but such as I knew not the names of, except those called

penguins.

I could have killed as many as I pleased, but was very sparing of my powder and shot; and therefore was more inclined to kill a she-goat, if I could, which I could better feed on; and though there were many goats here more than on the other side of the island, yet it was with much more difficulty I could come near them; the country being flat and even, they saw me much sooner than

when I was on the hills.

I confels this fide of the country was much pleafanter than mine, but yet I had not the leaft inclination to remove: for as I was fixed in my habitation, it became natural to me, and I feemed, all the while I was here, to be, as it were, upon a journey, and from home; however, I travelled along the shore of the sea towards the east, I suppose, about twelve miles; and then setting up a great pole upon the shore for a mark, I concluded I would go home again; and the next journey I took should be on the other side of the siland, east from my dwelling, and so round till I came to my post again; of which in it's place.

I took another way to come back than that I went,

thinking I could eafily keep all the island so much in my view, that I could not mits finding my first dwelling by viewing the country; but I soon discovered my mistake; to being come about two or three miles, I found myself descended into a very large valley; but so furrounded with hills, and those hills covered with woods, that I could not see which was my way by any direction but that of the fun, nor even then, unless I knew very well the position of the sun at that time of the day.

It happened, to my farther misfortune, that the weather proved hazy for three or four days, while I was in this valley; and not being able to fee the fun, I wandered about very uncomfortably, and at laft was obliged to find out the fea-fide, look for my poft, and come back the fame way I went; and then, by eafy journeys, I turned homeward, the weather being exceeding hot; and my gun, ammunition, hatchet, and other things,

very heavy.

In this journey my dog furprized a young kid, and feized upon it; and I running in to take hold of it, caught it, and faved it alive from the dog; I had a great mind to bring it home, if I could; for I had often been musting whether it might not be possible to get a kid or two, and so raise a breed of tame goats, which might supply me when my powder and shot should be spent.

I made a collar to this little creature, and with a ftring formed of some rope-yarn, which I always carried about me, I led him along, though with some difficulty, till I came to my bower, and there I inclosed him and left him; for I was very impatient to be at home, from whence I

had been absent above a month.

I cannot express what satisfaction it gave me, to come into my old habitation, and lie down in my hammock-bed: this little wandering journey, without a settled place of abode, had been so unpleasant to me, that my own house, as I called it to myself, was a perset settlement compared to that; and it rendered every thing about me so comfortable, that I resolved I would never go a great way from it again, while it should be my sot to stay on the island.

I reposed myself here a week to rest and regale myself after my long journey; during which, most of the time was taken up in the weighty affair of making a cage for my Pol, who began now to be a mere domestic, and to be mighty well acquainted with me. Then I began to think of the poor kid, which I had pent in within my little circle, and refolved to go and fetch it home, and give it fome food; accordingly I went, and found it where I left it; for indeed it could not get out, but was almost starved for want of food; I went and cut boughs of trees, and branches of fuch thrubs as I could find, and threw it over, and having fed it, I tied it, as before, to lead it away; but it was to tame with being hungry, that I had no need to have tied it; for it followed me like a dog; and, as I continually fed it, the creature grew fo loving, fo gentle, and fo fond, that it became from that time one of my domestics also, and would never leave me atterwards.

The rainy featon of the autumnal equinex was now come, and I kept the 30th of September in the same solemn manner as before, being the anniversary of my landing on the ifland, having now been there two years, and no more profpect of being delivered than the first day I came there. I fpent the whole day in humble and thankful acknowledgments of the many wonderful mercies which my folitary condition was attended with, and without which it might have been infinitely more miserable. I gave humble and hearty thanks, that God had been pleafed to discover to me, even that it was possible I might be more happy in this folitary condition, than I flould have been in the liberty of fociety, and in all the pleasures of the world: that he could fully make up to me the deficiencies of my folitary state, and the want of human fociety, by his prefence, and the communication of his grace to my foul, supporting, comforting, and encouraging me to depend upon his Providence here, and hope for his eternal presence hereafter.

It was now that I began fensibly to feel how much more happy the life I now led was, with all it's milera-

ble circumfiances, than the wicked, curfed, abominable life I led all the past part of my days; and now having changed both my forrows and my joys, my very defines altered, my affections changed their guit, and my delights were perfectly new, from what they were at first coming,

or indeed for the two years paft.

Before, as I walked about, either on my hunting, or for viewing the country, the anguish of my foul at my condition would break out upon me on a fudden, and my very heart would die within me, to think of the woods, the mountains, the defarts I was in; and that I was a prisoner locked up, with the eternal bars and bolts of the ocean, in an uninhabited wilderness, without redemption. In the midst of the greatest composures of my mind, this would break out upon me like a storm, and make me wring my hands, and weep like a child. Sometimes it would take me in the midste of my work, and I would immediately sit down and sigh, and look upon the ground for an hour or two together, and this was still worse to me; for if I could burst out into tears, or vent myself by words, it would go off, and the grief would naturally abate.

But now I began to exercise myself with new thoughts; I daily read the word of God, and applied all the comforts of it to my present state. One morning, being very sad, I opened the bible upon these words—"I will never, never leave thee, nor forsake thee!" Immediately it occurred, that these words were to me; why else should they bedirested in such a manner, just at the moment when I was mourning over my condition, as one forsaken of God and man? "Well, then," faid I, "if God does not forsake me, of what ill consequence "can it be, or what matters it, though the world should "all forsake me; seeing, on the other hand, if I had "all the world, and should lose the favour and blessing as the series of the same of the sa

" of God, there would be no comparison in the loss?"
From this moment I began to conclude in my mind, that it was possible for me to be more happy in this forfaken, solitary condition, than it was probable I should

have ever been in any other particular state in the world; and with this thought I was going to give thanks to God

for bringing me to this place.

I know not what it was, but fomething shocked my mind at that thought, and I durst not speak the words. "How canst thou be such an hypocrite," faid I, even audibly, "to pretend to be thankful for a condition, "which, however thou mayest endeavour to be constended with, thou wouldst rather pray heartily to be "delivered from?" So I stopped there; but though I could not say, I thanked God for being there, yet I sincerely gave thanks to God for opening my eyes, by whatever afflicting providences, to see the former condition of my life, and to mourn for my wickedness, and repent. I never opened the bible, or shut it, but my very soul within me blessed God for directing my friend in England, without any order of mine, to pack it up among my goods; and for affishing me afterwards to

fave it out of the wreck of the flip.

Thus, and in this disposition of mind, I began my third year; and though I have not given the reader the trouble of fo particular an account of my works this year as the first; yet in general, it may be observed, that I was very feldom idle; having regularly divided my time, according to the feveral daily employments that were before me; fuch as, First, My duty to God, and reading the Scriptures, which I constantly set apart fome time for, thrice every day. Secondly, The going abroad with my gun for food, which generally took me up three hours every morning when it did not rain. Thirdly, The ordering, curing, preferving, and cooking, what I had killed or catched for my supply. These took up great part of the day; also it is to be considered, that in the middle of the day, when the fun was in the zenith, the violence of the heat was too great to ffir out; fo that about four hours in the evening was all the time I could be supposed to work in; with this exception, that fometimes I changed my hours of hunting and working, and went to work in the morning, and abroad with my gun in the afternoon.

To this fhort time allowed for labour, I defire may be added the exceeding laboriousness of my work; the many hours, which, for want of tools, want of help, and want of skill, every thing that I did took up out of my time: for example, I was full two and forty days making me a board for a long shelf, which I wanted in in my cave; whereas two fawyers, with their tools and faw-pit, would have cut fix of them, out of the fame tree, in half a day.

My case was this: It was to be a large tree which was to be cut down, because my board was to be a broad one. The tree I was three days cutting down, and two more cutting off the boughs, and reducing it to a log, or piece of timber. With inexpressible hacking and hewing, I reduced both the fides of it into chips, till it began to be light enough to move; then I turned it, and made one fide imooth and flat as a board, from end to end; then turning that fide downward, cut the other fide till I brought the plank to be about three inches thick, and fmooth on both fides. Any one may judge the labour of my hands in fuch a piece of work; but labour and patience carried me through that and many other things; I only observe this in particular, to shew the reason why so much of my time went away with to little work, viz. that what might be a little to be done with help and tools, was a vait labour, and required a prodigious time, to do alone and without fuch : fliftance.

But, notwithstanding this, with patience and labour I went through many things, and indeed every thing my circumstances made necessary for me to do, as will

appear by what follows.

It was now the month of November when I expected my crop of barley and rice. The ground I had mamured, or dug up for them, was not great; for, as I observed, my seed of each was not above the quantity of half a peck; for I had lost one whole crop by fowing in the dry feafon: but now my crop promited very well, when, on a fudden, I found I was in danger of

loing it all again by enemies of feveral forts which it was fearce pollible to keep from it; as first the goats, and wild creatures which I called hares, who tasting the sweetness of the blade, lay in it night and day, as soon as it came up, and eat it so close, that it could get no

time to floot up into falks.

This I faw no remedy for, but by making an inclofure about it with a hedge, which I did with a great deal of toil; and the more, because it required expedition, the creatures daily fpoiling my corn. However, as my arable land was but finall, fusted to my crop, I got it totally well fenced in about three weeks; and shooting some of the creatures in the day-time, set my dog to guard it in the night, tying him up to a stake at the gate, where he would stand and bark all night long; so, in a little time, the enemies for fook the place, and the corn grew very strong and well, and began to ripen apace.

But as the beafts ruined me before, while my corn was in the blade, so the birds were as likely to ruin me now, when it was in the ear; for, going along by the place to see how it throve, I saw my little crop surrounded with fowls of I know not how many forts, which stood as it were watching till I should be gone. I unmediately let sly among them (for I had always my gun with me.) I had no sooner shot, but there arose up a little cloud of sowls, which I had not seen at all, from among the corn itself.

This touched me lentibly, for I forefaw, that in a few days they would devour all my hopes, that I flould be flarved, and never be able to raife a crop at all; and what to do I could not tell: however, I refolved not to lole my corn, if possible, though I flould watch it night and day. In the first place, I went among it, to see what damage was already done, and found they had spoiled a good deal of it; but that, as is was yet too green for them, the loss was not so great, but the remainder was like to be a good crop, if it could be saved.

I stayed by it to load my gun, and then coming away, I could easily see the thieves sitting upon all the trees about me, as if they only waited till I was gone away,

and the event proved it to be fo; for as I walked off, as if I was gone, I was no fooner out of their fight, but they dropped down one by one into the corn again. I was so provoked, that I could not have patience to flay till more came down, knowing that every grain they eat now was, as it might be faid, a peck-loaf to me in the consequence; but coming up to the hedge, I fired again, and killed three of them. This was what I wished for; fo I took them up, and ferved them as we ferve notorious thieves in England, viz. hanged them in chains, for a terror to others. It is impossible to imagine almost, that this should have such an effect as it had; for the fowls would not only not come to the corn, but in fhort they forfook all that part of the island, and I could never fee a bird near the place as long as my scarecrows hung there.

This I was very glad of, you may be fure; and about the latter end of December, which was my fecond har-

vest of the year, I reaped my corn.

I was fadly put to it for a feythe or a fickle to cut it down, and all I could do was to make one as well as I could out of one of the broad fwords or cutlaffes, which I had faved among the arms out of the fhip. However, as my crop was but fmall, I had no great difficulty to cut it down; in fhort, I reaped it my way, for I cut nothing off but the ears, and carried it away in a great baket which I had made, and fo rubbed it out with my hands; and at the end of all my harvefling, I found that out of my half-peck of feed, I had near two bufflels of rice, and above two bufflels and an half of baley; that is to fay, by my guess, for I had no measure at that time.

However, this was a great encouragement to me; and I forefaw, that in time it would pleate God to fupply me with bread: and yet here I was perplexed again for I neither knew how to grind or make meal of my corn, or indeed how to clean it and part it; nor, if made into meal, how to make bread of it; and if how to make it, yet I knew not how to bake it. These things be-

ing

irg added to my defire of having a good quantity for flore, and to fecure a conflant fupply. I refolved not to taffe any of this crop, but to preserve it all for feed against the next feason, and in the mean time to employ all my study and hours of working to accomplish this great work of providing myself with corn and bread.

It might be truly faid, that now I worked for my bread. It is a little wonderful, and what I believe few people have thought much uport, viz. the firange multitude of little things necessary in the providing, producing, curing, dressing, making, and finishing, this one

article of bread.

VOL. I.

I, that was reduced to a mere flate of nature, found this to be my daily difcouragement, and was made more and more fenfible of it every hour, even after I got the first handful of feed corn, which, as I have said, came

up unexpectedly, and indeed to my furprize.

First, I had no plough to turn the earth, nor spade or shovel to dig it. Well, this I conquered by making a wooden spade, as I observed before; but this did my work but in a wooden manner; and though it cost me a great many days to make it, yet, for want of iron, it not only wore out the sooner, but made my work the harder and much worse done.

However, this I bore with, and was content to work it out with patience, and bear with the badness of the performance. When the corn was sowed, I had no harrow, but was forced to go over it myfelf, and drag great heavy bough of a tree over it, to feratch the earth, as it may be called, rather than rake or harrow it.

When it was growing, or grown, I have observed already how many things I wanted, to sence it, secure it, new or reap it, cure or carry it home, thresh, part it from the chaff, and save it. Then I wanted a mill to grind it, sieves to dress it, yeast and falt to make it into bread, and an oven to bake it in; and all these things I did without, as shall be observed; and yet the corn was an inestimable comfort and advantage to me too; but all this, as I said, made every thing laborious and tedi-

dious to me, but that there was no help for; neither was my time fo much lofs to me, because I had divided it; a certain part of it was every day appointed to their works; and as I refolved to use none of the corn for bread, till I had a greater quantity by me, I had the next fix months to apply myself wholly, by Jabour and invention, to furnish myself with usefuls proper for performing all the perations necessary for making the corn, when I had it, fit for use.

But, first, I was to prepare more land, for I had now feed enough to fow above an acre of ground. Before I did this, I had a week's work at least to make me a spade, which, when it was done, was a very poor one indeed, and being heavy, required double labour to work withit; however, I went through that, and lowed my seeds in two large flat pieces of ground, as near my house as I could find them to my mind, and sence them in with a good hedge, the stakes of which were all cut off that wood I had set before, which I knew would grow, so that in one year's time I was sure I should have a quick or living hedge, that would want but little repair. This work was not so trifling but that it took me up at least three months, because great part of that may was of the wet season, when I could not go abroad.

Within-door, that is, when it rained, and I could not go out, I found employment on the following occasion, always observing, that all the while I was at work, I diverted myself with talking to my parrot, and teaching him to speak; and I quickly learned him to know his own name; at last, to speak it out pretty loud, POL; which was the first word I ever heard spoken in the island by any mouth but my own. This, therefore was not my work, but an affistant to my work; for now, as I said, I had a great employment upon my hands, which was as follows: I had long studied, by some means or other, to make myself some earthen vessels, which is deed, I greatly wanted, but knew not how to come at them: however, considering the heat of the climate, I did not doubt but, if I could find out any fach clay, I

might botch up some such pot, as might, being dried by the fun, be hard enough, and ftrong enough to bear handling, and to hold anything that was dry, and required meal, &c. which was the thing I was upon, I refolved to make fome as large as I could, and fit only to ftand like jars to held what should be put into them.

It would make the reader pity me, or rather laugh at me, to tell how many awkward ways I took to raife this paste, what odd, mishapen ugly things I made, how many of them fell in, and how many fell out, the clay not being stiff enough to bear its own weight; how many cracked by the over-violent heat of the fun, being fet out too hashily; and how many fell to pieces, with only removing, as well before as after they were dried; and, in a word, how, after having laboured hard to find the clay, to dig it, to temper it, to bring it home, and work it, I could not make above two large earthen ugly t ings, I cannot call them jars, in about two months labour.

However, as the fun baked thefe two very dry and hard, I lifted them gently up, and fet them down again in two great wicker baskets, which I had made on purpofe for them, that they might not break; and as, between the pot and the basket, there was a little room to spare. I stuffed it full of the rice and barley straw, and these two being to stand always dry, I thought would hold my corn, and perhaps the meal when the corn was bruifed.

Though I miscarried so much in my design for large pots, yet I made feveral finaller things with better fuccefs; fuch as little round pots, flat diffies, pitchers, and pipkins, and any thing my hand turned to; and the

heat of the fun baked them exceeding hard.

But all this would not answer my end; which was to get an earthen pot to hold what was liquid, and bear the fire, which none of these could do. It happened, after some time, making a pretty large fire for cooking my meat, when I went to put it out, after I had done with

with it, I found a broken piece of one of my earthenware veilels in the fire, burnt as hard as a flone and red as a tile. I was agreeably furprifed to fee it, and faid to myfelf, that certainly they might be made

to burn whole, if they would burn broken.

This fet me to fludy how to order my fire, fo as to make it burn me some pots. I had no notion of a kiln fuch as the potters burn in, or of glazing them with lead, though I had fome lead to do it with: but I placed three large pipkins, and two or three pots, in a pile, one upon another, and placed my fire-wood all round it, with a great heap of embers under them: I plied the fire with fresh fuel round the outside, and upon the top, till I faw the pots in the infide red-hot quite through, and observed that they did not crack at all: when I faw them clear red; I let them fland in that heat about five or fix hours, till I found one of them, though it did not crack, did melt or run; for the fand which was mixed with the clay, melted by the violence of the heat, and would have run into glass, if I had gone on; fo I flacked my fire gradually, till the pots began to abate of the red colour; and watching them all night, that I might not let the fire abate too fast, in the morning I had three very good, I will not fay handsome pipkins, and two other earthen pots, as hard burnt as could be defired; and one of them perfeStly glazed with the running of the fand.

After this experiment I need not fay that I wanted no fort of earthen-ware for my ufe; but I mut observe as to the shapes of them, they were very indifferent, as any one may suppose, when I had no way of making them, but as the children make dirt pies, or as a woman would make pies that never learned to raise paste.

No joy at a thing of fo mean a nature was ever equal to mine, when I found I had made an earthen pot that would bear the fire; and I had hardly patience to flay till they were cold, before I fet one upon the fire again, with some water in it, to boil some meat, which I did admirably well; and with a piece of a kid I made some

very good broth, though I wanted oatmeal, and feveral other ingredients requisite to make it so good as I would have had it.

My next concern was, to get me a ftone mortar, to ftamp or beat some corn in: for as to the mill, there was no thought of arriving to that perfection of art with one pair of hands. To fupply this want, I was at a great lois; for, of all trades in the world, I was as perfectly unqualified for a stone-cutter, as for any whatsoever; neither had I any tools to go about it with. fpent many a day to find out a great stone big enough to cut hollow, and make fit for a mortar, and could find none at all, except what was in the folid rock, and which I had no way to dig or cut out; nor indeed were the rocks in the island of hardness sufficient, but were all of a sandy crumbling stone, which would neither bear the weight of an heavy peftle, nor would it break the corn without filling it with fand: fo, after a great deal of time loft in fearthing for a stone, I gave it over, and resolved to look out a great block of hard wood, which I found indeed much easier; and getting one as big as I had Brength to ftir, I rounded it, and formed it on the outfide with my ax and hatchet; and then with the help of fire, and infinite labour, made an hollow place in it, as the Indians in Brazil make their canoes. After this, I made a great heavy pettle or heater, of the wood called the iron-wood, and this I prepared and laid by against I had n y next crop of corn, when I proposed to myself to grind, or rather pound, my corn or meal to make my bread.

My next difficulty was to make a fieve or fierce, to drels my meal, and part it from the bran and the hufk, without which I did not fee it possible I could have any bread. This was a most difficult thing, so much as but to think on; for to be ture I had nothing like the necessary things to make it with: I mean, fine thin canvas, or stuff to fierce the meal through. And here I was at a full stop for many months; nor did I really know what to do; linen I had none left, but what were

MA

mere rags; I had goats hair, but neither knew I how to weave or ipin it; and had I known how, here were no tools to work it with: all the remedy I found for this was, that at laft I did remember I had among the feamens cloathes which were faved out of the fhip, some neckcloths of callico or muslin; and with some pieces of these I made three small sieves, but proper enough for the work; and thus I made a shift for some years; how

I did afterwards, I shall shew in its place.

The baking part was the next thing to be confidered, and how I should make bread when I came to have corn; for, first, I had no yeast: as to that part, as there was no supplying the want, so I did not concern myself much about it. But, for an oven, I was indeed in great pain. At length I found out an experiment for that allo, which was this; I made some earthen vessels very broad, but not deep; that is to say, about two feet diameter, and not above nine inches deep; these I buint in the fire, as I had done the other, and laid them by; and when I wanted to bake, I made a great fire upon the hearth, which I had paved with some square tiles of my own making and burning also; but I should not call them square.

When the fire-wood was burnt pretty much into embers or live coals, I drew them forward upon this hearth, fo as to cover it all over; and there I let them lie till the hearth was very hot; then fweeping away all the embers, I put down my loaf or loaves: and whelming down the earthen pot upon them, drew the embers all round the outfide of the pot, to keep in and add to the heat; and thus, as well as in the beft oven in the world. I baked my barley-loaves, and became in a little time a mere pathry-cook into the bargain; for I made my felf feveral cakes of the rice, and puddings; indeed I made no pies, neither had I any thing to put into them, fuppoing I had, except the flesh either of fowls or

goats

It need not be wondered at, if all these things took me up most part of the third year of my abode here?

for it is to be observed, that in the intervals of these things I had my new harvest and husbandry to manage: for I reaped my corn in its season, and carried home as well as I could, and laid it up in the ear, in my large baskets, till I had time to rub it out; for I had no floor to thresh it on, or instrument to thresh it with.

And now, indeed, my flock of come necreating, I wanted to build my barns bigger: I wanted a place to lay it up in; for the increase of the corn now yielded me so much, that I had of the barley about twenty bushels, and of the rice as much, or more; informuch, that I now resolved to begin to use it freely, for my bread had been quite gone a great while; also I resolved to see what quantity would be sufficient for me a whole year, and to sow but once a year.

Upon the whole, I found that the forty bushels of barley and rice were much more than I could confume in a year; fo I refolved to low just the fame quantity every year that I fowed the last, in hopes that such a quantity would fully provide me with bread, &c.

All the while there things were doing, you may be fure my thoughts ran many times upon the prospect of land, which I had feen from the other fide of the island; and I was not without feeret wishes, that I was on shore there; saneying that seeing the main land, and an inhabited country, I might find some way or other to convey my felt farther, and perhaps, at last, find some means of escape.

But all this while I made no allowance for the dangers of fach a condition, and how I might fall into the hands of favoges, and perhaps fuch as I might have reason to think far world than the lions and tygers of Africa: that if I once came into their power, I should run a hazard, more than a thousand to one, of being killed, and perhaps of being eaten; for I had heard that the people of the Caribean coasts were cannibals, or men caters; and I knew by the latitude, that I could not be far off from that shore: that, suppose they were not cannibals, yet they might kill me, as many Europeans

ans who had fallen into their hands had been ferved, even when they had been ten or twenty together; much more I, that was but one, and could make little or no defence. All these things, I say, which I ought to have considered well of, and which engaged my thoughts asterwards, took up none of my apprehensions at first; and my head ran mightily upon the thoughts of getting over to that shore.

Now I wished for my boy Xury, and the long-boat with the shoulder of mutton fail, with which I said above a thousand, miles on the coast of Africa; but this was in vain. Then I thought I would go and look on our ship's boat, which, as I have said, was blown up upon the shore a great way in the storm, when we were first cast away. She lay almost where she did at first, but not quite; and was tunned, by the force of the waves and winds, almost bottom upwards, against the high ridge of beachy, rough sand, but no water about her as before.

If I had had hands to have refitted her, and have launched her into the water, the boat would have done well enough, and I might have gone back into the Brazils with her eafy enough; but I might have eafly forefeen, that I could no more turn her; and fet her upright upon her bottom, than I could remove the ifland. However, I went to the wood, and cut levers and rollers, and brought them to the boat, refolving to try what I could do: fuggefting to myfelf that if I could but turn her down. I might eafly repair the damage the had received, and that the would be a very good boat, and I might go to fea in her very eafly.

I spared no pains, indeed, in this piece of fruitless toil, and I spent, I think, three or four weeks about it; at last, finding it impossible to heave it up with my little strength, I fell to digging away the sand to undermine it; and so to make it fall down, setting pieces of wood

to thrust and guide it right in the fall.

But when I had done this, I was unable to ffir it up again, or to get under it, much less to move it forwards towards towards the water; so I was forced to give it up: and yet, though I gave over the hopes of the boat, my define to venture across the main increased, rather than decreased, as the means for it seemed impossible.

This at length let me upon thinking, whether it was not possible to make mylelf a cance, or periagua, sich as the natives of those climates make, even without tools, or, as I might fay, without hands, viz. of the trunk of a great tree. This I not only thought poffible, but easy; and pleased myself extremely with the thoughts of making it, and with my having much more convenience for it than any of the negroes or Indians; but not at all confidering the particular inconveniencies which I lay under more than the Indians did, viz. want of hands to move it into the water when it was made; a difficulty much harder for me to furmount, than all the confequences that want of tools could be to them: for what was it to me, that when I had chosen a vast tree in the woods, I might with great trouble cut it down, if after I might be able with my tools to hew and dub the outfide into a proper shape of a boat, and burn or cut out the infide to make it hollow, fo as to make a boat of it; if, after all this, I must leave it just where I found it, and was not able to launch it into the water?

One would have thought I could not have had the leaft reflection upon my mind from this circumflance, while I was making this boat, but I should have immediately thought how I should get it into the sea; but my thoughts were so intent upon my voyage over the fea in it, that I never once confidered how I should get it off the land; and it was really in its own nature more easy for me to guide it over forty-five miles of sea, than about forty-five fathom of land, where it lay,

to let it affoat in the water.

I went to work upon this boat the most like a fool that ever man did, who had any of his senses awake. I pleased myself with the design, without determining whether or not I was able to undertake it; not but that the difficulty of launching my boat came often into my head;

kead; but I put a ftop to my own enquiries into it, by this foolish answer which I gave myself—' Let me si st make it, I'll warrant I'll find some way or other to

e get it along when it is done."

This was a most preposterous idea, but the eagerness of my fancy prevailed, to work I went, and felled a cedar tree: I question much whether Solomon ever had fuch an one for the building the temple at Jerusalem; it was five feet ten inches diameter at the lower part next the frump, and four feet eleven inches diameter at the end of twenty-two feet, after which it leffened gradually and then parted into branches; it was not without infinite labour that I felled this tree: I was twenty days hacking and hewing it at the bottom: I was fourteen more getting the branches and limbs, and the valt fpreading head of it cut off; which I hacked and hewed through with my ax and hatchet. After this it cost me a month to fliape it, to bring it to a proportion, and to fomething like the bottom of a boat, that it might fwim upright as it ought to do. It cost me near three months more to clear the infide, and work it out, to as to make an exact boat of it: this I did, indeed, without fire, by mere mallet and chiffel, and by the dint of hard labour, till I had brought it to be a very handsome periagua, and big enough to have carried fix-and-twenty men, and confequently big enough to have carried me and all my cargo.

When I had gone through this work, I was extremely delighted with it: the boat was really much bigger than I ever faw a canoe or periagua, that was made of one tree in my life; and many a weary froke ithad coft me, you may be fure. There remained nothing but to get it into the water, which had I been able to effect, I make no doubt but I should have begun the maddelf yoyage, and the most unlikely to be performed, that

ever was undertaken.

But all my devices to get it into the water failed me, though they cost infinite labour too; it lay about one hundred yards from the water, and not more; but the

in

first inconvenience was, it was up hill towards the creeked Well, to take away this discouragement, I resolved to dig into the surface of the earth, and so make a declivity; this I began, and it cost me a prodigious deal of pains: but who will grudge pains, that have their deliverance in view? But when this was worked through, and this difficulty removed, it was still much the same; for I could no more stir the canoe, than I could the other boat.

I then measured the distance of ground, and resolved to cut a dock, or canal, to bring the water up to the cance, seeing I could not bring the cance down to the water. Well, I began this work, and when I entered into it, and calculated how deep it was to be dug, how broad, how the stuff to be thrown out, I found, that by the number of hands I had, being none but my own, it must have been ten or twelve years before I should have gone through with it; for the shore lay high, so that, at the upper end, if must have been at least twenty see deep. In consequence of these distributions, I gave up all thoughts of getting my vessel into the water.

This grieved me heartily; and now I faw, though too late, the folly of beginning a work before we count the coft, and before we judge rightly of our own frongth to

go through with it.

While profecating this work I finished my fourth year in this island, and kept my anniversary with the same devotion, and with as much comfort as ever before; for by a constant study, and ferious application of the word of God, and by the affistance of his grace, I gamed a different knowledge from what I had before; I entertained different notions of things; I looked now upon the world as a thing remote, which I had nothing to do with, no expectation from, and indeed no defires about. In a word, I had nothing indeed to do with it, nor was ever like to have; so I thought it looked, as we perhaps may look upon it hereafter, viz. as a place I had lived in, but was come out of; and well might I say, as Father Abraham said to I ives—' Between me and thee there is a great gulph fixed.'

In the first place I was removed from all the wicked? ness of the world here : I had neither the ' Lust of the flesh, the lust of the eye, or the pride of life:' I had nothing to covet, for I had all I was now capable of enjoying: I was lord of the whole manor, or, if I pleafed, I might call my felf king, or emperor over the whole country which I had pofferfion of : there were no rivals. I had no competitor, none to dispute lovereignty or command with me. I might have ruled thip leadings of corn, but I had no use for it; so I let as little grow as I thought enough for my occasion: I had tortoiles or turtles enough; but now and then one was as much as I could put to any ute. I had timber enough to have built a fleet of ships; I had grapes enough to have made wine, or have cured into raifins, to have loaded that fleet when they had been built.

But all I could make use of, was what was valuable. I had enough to eat, and to supply my wants, and what was all the rest to me? if I killed more flesh than I could eat, the dog must eat it, or the vermin; if I fowed more corn than I could eat, it must be spoiled: the trees that I cut down were lying to rot on the ground, I could make no more use of them than for fuel; and that I had

no occasion for, but to drefs my food.

In a word, the nature and experience of things dictated to me, upon just reflection, that all the good things of this world are no farther good to us, than they are for our use; and that whatever we may heap up, indeed, to give others, we enjoy as much as we can ule, and no The most covetous griping miser in the world would have been cured of the vice of covetouineis, if he had been in my case; for I possessed infinitely more than I knew what to do with; I had no room for defire, except it was of things which I had not, and they were but trifles, though indeed of great use to me. I had, as I hinted before, a parcel of money, as well gold as filver, about thirty-fix pounds fterling; alas! there the nafty, forry, useless stuff lay; I had no manner of use for it; and I often thought with myself, that I would have given a handful of it for a groß of tobacco-pipes, or a handmill to grind my corn: nay, I would have given it all for fix-penny-worth of turnep and carrot feed out of England, or for a handful of peas and beans, and a bottle of ink. As it was, I had not the leaft advantage by it, or benefit from it; but there it lay in a drawer, and grew mouldy with the damp of the cave, in the wet fealon; and if I had had the drawer full of diamonds, it had been the same case; and they had been of no value

to me, because of no use.

I had now brought my flate of life to be much easier in itself than it was at first, and much easier to my mind as well as to my body. I frequently lat down to my ment with thankfulners, and admired the hand of Gods providence, which had thus spread my table in the wilderness: I learned to look more upon the bright side of my condition, and less upon the dark-side; and to consider what I enjoyed, rather than what I wanted; and this gave me formerimes such fecret comforts, that I cannot express them; and which I take notice of here, to put those discontented people in mind of it, who cannot enjoy comfortably what God bath given them, because they see and covet something that he has not given them. All our discontents about what we want appear to me to spring from the want of thankfulness for what we have.

Another reflection was of great use to me, and doubtless would be to to any one that should fall into such diftress as mine was; and this was to compare my present
condition with what I at first expected it should be;
nay, with what it would certainly have been, if the good
Providence of God had not wonderfully ordered the ship
to be cast up neares to the shore, where I not only could
come at her, but could bring what I got out or her to
the shore for my relief and comfort; without which I
had wanted tools to work, weapons for desence, or gunpowder and shot for getting my food.

I spent whole hours, I may say whole days, in repre-Vol. I.

tenting to myfelt in the most lively colours, how I must have acted, if I had got nothing out of the ship; I red flected that I could not have fo much as got any food, except fifh and turtles; and that, as it was long before I found any of them, I must have perished first: that I should have lived, if I had not perished, like a mere favage; that if I had killed a goat or a fowl by any contrivance, I had no way to flea or open them, or part the flesh from the skin and the bowels, or to cut it up; but must gnaw it with my teeth, and pull it with my claws, like a beaft.

These reflections made me very sensible of the goodness of Providence, and very thankful for my present condition, with all its hardfhips and misfortunes; and this part also I cannot but recommend to the reflection of those who are apt in their milery to fay- Is any ' affliction like mine?' Let them confider he w much worse the cases of some people are, and what their case might have been, if it had been the will of Provi-

I had another reflection which affifted me also to comfort my mind with hopes; and this was, comparing my prefent condition with what I had deferved, and had therefore reason to expect from the hand of Providence; I had lived a deadful life, perfectly deltitute of the knowledge and fear of God; I had been well instructed by father and mother; neither had they been wanting to me in their early endeavours to infuse a religious awe of God into my mind, a fense of my duty, and of what the nature and end of my being required of me: but, alas! falling early into the fea-faring life, which of all others makes men the most destitute of the fear of God, though his terrors are always before them; I fay, falling early into the fea-faring life, and into fea-faring company, all that little fense of religion, which I had entertained, was laughed out of me by my mesimates; by an hardened despising of dangers, and the views of death which grew habitual to me; by my long absence from all manner of opportunities to converse with any

and the later of

thing

thing but what was like myfelf, or to hear any thing of

what was good, or tended towards it.

So void was I of every thing that was good, or of the leaft fenfe of what I was, or was to be, that in the greatest deliverance I enjoyed, such as my escape from sallee, my being taken up by the Portuguese master of the ship, my being planted so well in Brazil, my receiving the cargo from England, and the like, I never once had the words 'Thank God,' so much as on my mind, or in my mouth: nor in the greatest distress had I so much thought as to pray to him, nor so much as to say, 'Lord have mercy upon me!' No, not to mention the name of God, unless it was to swear by, and blaspheme it.

I had terrible reflections upon my mind for many month as I have already observed, on account of my wicked and hardened past life; and when I looked about me, and considered what particular providences had attended me, since my coming into this place, and that God had dealt bountifully with me; had not only punished me less than my iniquity deserved, but had so plentifully provided for me; this gave me great hopes, that my repentance was accepted, and that God had yet

mercies in store for me.

With these reslections I worked my mind up, not only to refignation to the will of God in the prefent difpolition of my circumstances, but even to a fincere thankfulness of my condition; and that I, who was yet a living man, ought not to complain, feeing I had not the due punishment of my fins; that I enjoyed fo many mercies, which I had no reason to have expected in that place; that I ought never more to repine at my condition, but to rejoice and give daily thanks, for that daily bread, which nothing but a cloud of wonders could have brought: that I ought to confider I had been fed, even by a miracle, as great as that of feeding Elijah by ravens; nay, by a long feries of miracles; and that I could hardly have named a place in the uninhabited part of the world, where I could have been cast more to my advantage :

advantage: a place where, as I had no fociety, which was my affliction on one hand, fo I found no ravenous beafts, no furious wolves or tygers, to threaten my life; no venomous or poisonous creatures which I might have fed on to my hurt; no favages to murder and devour me.

In a word, as my life was a life of forrow one way, fo it was a life of mercy another; and I wanted nothing to make it a life of comfort, but to be able to make my fense of God's goodness to me, and care over me in this condition, be my daily confolation; and after I made a just improvement of these things, I went away, and was no more dejected.

I had now been here fo long, that many things which I brought on shore for my help, were either quite gone,

or very much wasted, and near spent.

My ink, as I observed, had been gone for some time, all but a very little, which I eeked out with water a little and a little, till it was so pale it scarce left any appearance of black upon the paper. As long as it lasted I made use of it to minute down the days of the month on which any remarkable thing happened to me; and first, by casting up times past, I remember, that there was a strange concurrence of days, in the various providences which befel me, and which, if I had been juperstitiously inclined to observe days as fatal or fortunate, I might have had reason to have looked upon with a great deal of curiofity.

First, I had observed, that the same day I broke away from my father and my friends, and ran away to Hull, in order to go to sea, the same day afterwards I was taken by the Sallee man of war, and made a flave.

The same day of the year that I escaped out of the wreck of that ship in Yarmouth-Roads, that same day of the year afterwards I made my escape from Sallee in the boat.

The same day of the year on which I was born, viz. the 20th of September, the same day I had my life to miraculously faved twenty-fix years after, when I was cast on shore in this island: so that my wicked life, and folitary life, both began on a day.

The next thing to my ink being wasted, was that of my bread; I mean, the biscuit which I brought out of the ship. This I had husbanded to the last degree, allowing myself but one cake of bread a day for above a year; and yet I was quite without bread for a year, before I got any corn of my own; and great reason I had to be thankful that I had any at all, the getting it being, as has been already observed, next to miraculous.

My clothes too began to decay: as to linen, I had been without it fome time, except fome checked fhirts which I found in the chefts of the other feamen, and which I carefully preferved, because many times I could wear no other cloaths on but a shirt; and it was a great help to me, that I had, among all the mens cloaths of the ship, almost three dozen of shirts. There were also several thick watch-coats of the teamen, which were left behind, but they were too hot to wear; and though it is true the weather was so violent hot that there was no need of cloaths, yet I could not go quite naked; no, though I had been inclined to it, which I was not; nor could bear the thoughts of it, though I was all alone.

One reason why. I did not choose to go quite naked was, I could not bear the heat of the sun so well when quite naked, as with some cloaths on; nay, the very heat frequently blistered my skin; whereas, with a shirt on, the air itself made some motion, and whistling under the shirt, was twosold cooler than without it: no more could I ever bring myself to go out in the heat of the sun without a cap or an hat; the heat of the sun beating with such violence as it does in that place, would give me the head-ach presently, by darting so directly on my head, that I could not bear it; whereas, if I put on my hat, it would soon go away.

From these reasons I was induced, accordingly, to consider about putting the few rags I had, which I called cloaths, into some order; I had worn out all the waistcoats, and my business was now to try if I could not make jackets out of the great watch-coats, and with such other materials as I had. I set to work tayloring,

N 3

or rather, indeed botching: for I made most piteous work of it. However, I contrived to make two or three waistcoars, which I hoped would serve me a great while; as for breeches, or drawers, I made a very poor effort, indeed.

I have mentioned, that I faved the fkins of all the creatures I killed, I mean four-footed ones; and I had hung them up firetched out with flicks in the fun, by which means fome of them were fo dry and hard, that they were of little ufe; but others were very ferviceable.

The first thing I made of these was a great cap for my head, with the hair on the outside to shoot off the rain; and this I performed so well, that I afterwards made a fuit of cloaths wholly of those skins; that is to say, a waistcoat and breeches open at the knees, and both loose; for they were rather wanting to keep me cool, than to keep me warm. I must not omit to acknowledge, that they were wretchedly made; for, if I was a bad carpenter, I was a worse taylor; however, they were such as I made a very good shift with; and when I was abroad, if it happened to rain, the hair of the waistcoat and can be the proposed.

and cap being outermost, I was kept very dry.

After this I spent a deal-of time and pains to make me an umbrella, of which, indeed, I was in great want. I had feen them made in the Brazils, where they are very useful in the great heats of that part of the world; and I felt the heats every jot as great here, and greater too, being nearer the equinox; befides, as I was obliged to be much abroad, it was a most useful thing to me, as well for the rains as the heats. I took great pains at it, and was a long while before I could make any thing likely to hold; nay, after I thought I had hit the way, I Spoiled two or three before I made one to my mind; But, at last, I made one that answered indifferently well; the main difficulty I found was to make it let down. I could make it to spread; but if it did not let down too, and draw in, it would not be portable for me any way, but just over my head, which would not do: however, at last, as I said, I made one to answer; I covered it

with

I was

with Kins, the hair upwards, so that it cast off the rain like a pent-house, and kept off the sun so eff ctually, that I could walk out in the hottest of the weather, with greater advantage than I could before in the coolest; and when I had no need of it, I could close it, and carry it.

under my arm.

Thus I live very comfortably, my mind being entirely composed by refigning myself to the will of God, and throwing myself wholly upon the dipotal of his providence; this made my life better than locable; for, when I began to regret the want of conversation, I would ask myself, whether thus conversing mutually with my own thoughts, and, as I hope, I may ay, with even my Maker, by ejaculations and petitions, was not better than the utmost enjoyment of human lociety in the world.

I cannot fay, that after this, for five years, any extraordinary thing happened to me; but I lived on in the same course, in the same state and place, just as before; the chief thing I was employed in, befiles my yearly labour of planting my barley and rice, and curing my raifins, of both which I always kept up just enough to have fufficient stock of the year's provisions beforehand; I fay, befides this yearly labour, and my daily labour of going out with my gun, I had a laborious talk to make me a canoe, which at last I finished; so that by digging a canal to it fix feet wide and four feet deep, I brought it into the creek almost half a mile. As for the first, it was by far too large, having made it without confidering beforehand, as I ought to have done, how I should be able to launch it; in confequence of which, not being able to bring it to the water, or the water to it, I was obliged to let it lie where it was, as a memorandum to teach me to be wher next time. Indeed, the next time, though I could not get a tree proper for it, and was in a place where I could not get the water to it, ar any less distance than, as I have faid, of near half a mile; yet, as I saw it was practicable I never gave it over till I had accomplished it; and though I was near two years about it, yet I never grudged my labour, in hopes of having a boat with which I might

proceed to fea.

However, though my little periagua was finished, yet the fize of it was not at all answerable to the defign which I had in view when I made the first; I mean, of venturing over to the terra firma, where it was above forty miles broad; accordingly, the finallness of my. boat affifted to put an end to that defign, and now I thought no more of it; but, as I had a boat, my next defign was to make a tour round the island; for, as I had been on the other fide, in one place, croffing, as I have already defcribed it, over the land: fo the difcoveries I made in that journey made me very eager to fee the other parts of the coast; and now I had a boat, I thought of nothing but failing round the island.

For this purpose, and that I might do every thing with discretion and consideration, I fitted up a little mast to my boat, and made me a fail to it out of some of the pieces of the ship's fails, which lay in store, and of which

I had a great quantity by me.

Having fitted my maft and fail, and tried the boat, I found the would fail very well: I then made little lockers and boxes at either end of my boat, to put provisions, necessaries, ammunition, &c. into, to be kept dry, either from rain, or the fpray of the fea; and I cut in the infide of the boat, a little, long, hollow place, where I could lay my gun, making a flap to hang down overit

to keep it dry.

I fixed my umbrella also in a step at the stern, like a mast, to stand over my head, and keep the heat of the fun off me like an awning; and thus I every now and then took a small voyage upon the sea, but never went far from the creek. At last, being eager to view the circumference of my little kingdom, I rejolved upon my tour, and accordingly victualled my thip for the voyage; putting in two dozen of my loaves (cakes I should rather call them) of barley-bread; an earthen pot full of parched rice, (a food of which I eat a great deal) a finall bottle of rum: half a goat, and powder with shot for killing more: and two large watch coats, of those which, as I mentioned before, I had saved out of the seamens chelts; these I took, one to lie upon, and the other to

cover me in the night.

It was the fixth of November, in the fixth year of my reign, or my captivity, which you pleafe, that I fet out on the voyage; and I found it much longer than I expected; for though the island itself was not very large, yet, when I came to the east-fide of it, I found a great ledge of rocks he out about two leagues into the sea, fome above water, some under it; and beyond this, a shoal of land, lying dry half a league more; so that I was obliged to go a great way out to sea to double that point.

When I first discovered them, I was going to give over my enterprize, and come back again, not knowing how far it might oblige me to go out to sea; and, above all, doubting how I should get back again; so I came to an anchor, for I had made me a kind of anchor with a piece of broken grappling which I got out of the ship.

Having fecured my boat, I took my gun, and went on fhore, climbing up an hill, which feemed to overlook that point, where I faw the full extent of it, and refolved

to venture.

In viewing the sea from that h'll where I stood, I perceived a frong, and indeed a most furious current, which ran to the east, and even came close to the point; and I took the more notice of it, because I saw there might be some danger, that when I came into it, I might be carried out to sea by its strength, and not be able to make the island again; and, indeed, had I not gotten first upon this hill, I believe it would have been so; for there was the same current on the other side of the island, only that it set off at a farther distance; and I saw there was a save goddy under the shore; so I had nothing to do but to get out of the sirst current, and I should presently be in an eddy.

I lay here, however, two days; because the wind blow.

ing pretty fresh (E. at S. E. and that being just contrary to the said current) made a great breach of the sea upon the point; so that it was not safe for me to keep too close to the shore for the breach, nor to go too far off because of the stream.

The third day, in the morning, the wind having abated over night, the fea was calm, and I ventured; but no fooner did I reach the point, when even I was, not my boat's length from the shore, than I found myfelf in a great depth of water, and a current like a fluice of a mill; it carried my boat along with it with fuch violence, that all I could do could not keep her fo much as on the edge of it; but I found it hurried me farther and farther out from the eddy, which was on the lefthand, There was no wind ftiring to help me, and all I could do with my paddle fignified nothing; and now I began to give mylelf over for loft; for, as the current was on both fides the island, I knew in a few leagues distance they must join again, and then I was irrecoverably gone; nor did I fee any possibility of avoiding it; so that I had no prospect before me but of perishing; not by the fea, for that was calm enough, but of flarving for hunger. I had indeed found a tortoise on the shore, as big almost as I could lift, and had tossed it into the boat; and I had a great jar of fresh water, that is to say, one of my earthen pots; but what was all this to being driven into the yast occean, where, to be fure, there was no shore, no main land or island, for a thousand leagues at least.

And now I faw how eafy it was for the providence of God to make the most miserable condition that mankind could be in, worse. Now I looked back upon my desolate solitary island, as the most pleasant place in the worse, and all the happiness my heart could wish for, was to be there again. I stretched out my hands to it with eager wishes: 'O happy defart!' faid I, I shall never 'see thee more! O miserable creature!' faid I, 'whith the my unthankful temper, and how I had repined at my

folitary

folitary condition; and now what would I give to be on shore there again! Thus we never see the true state of our condition, till it is illustrated to us by its contraries; nor know how to value what we enjoy, but by the want of it; it is scarce possible to imagine the consternation I was now in, being driven from my beloved island (for so it appeared to me now to be) into the wide ocean, almost two leagues, and in the utmost despair of ever recovering it again: however, I worked hard, till indeed my firength was almost exhausted; and kept my boat as much to the northward, that is, towards the fide of the current which the eddy lay on, as possibly I could; when, about noon, as the fun passed the meridian, I thought I felt a little breeze of wind in my face, fpringing up from the S. S. E. This cheered my heart a little, and especially when, in about half an hour more, it blew a pretty fmall gentle gale: by this time I was gotten at a frightful distance from the island; and, had the least cloud or hazy weather intervened, I had been undone another way too; for I had no compass on board, and should never have known how to have fteered towards the island if I had once lost fight of it; but the weather continuing clear, I applied myfelf to get up my mast again, and spread my fail, standing away to the north, as much as possible, to get out of the current.

Just as I had fet my mast and fail, and the boat began to ftretch away, I faw, even by the clearnels of the water, some alteration of the current was near; for where the current was fo ftrong, the water was foul; but perceiving the water clear, I found the current abate; and presently I discovered to the east, at about half a mile, a breach of the fea upon fome rocks; these rocks I found caused the current to part again; and as the main stress of it ran away more southerly, leaving the rocks to the N. E. fo the other returned by the repulle of the rock, and made a firong eddy, which ran back

again to the N. W. with a very sharp stream.

Those who know what it is to have a reprieve brought

them upon the ladder, or to be refetted from thieves Just going to murder them, or who have been in such like extremities, may guess what my present surprize of joy was, and how gladly I put my boat into the stream of this eddy; and the wind also freshening, how gladly I spread my fail to it, running chearfully before the wind, and with a strong tide or eddy under toot.

This eddy carried me about a league in my way back again, directly towards the island, but about two leagues more towards the northward than the current lay, which carried me away at first, so that when I came near the island, I found myself open to the northern shore of it, that is to say, the other end of the island, opposite to that which I went out from.

When I had made fomething more than a league of way by the help of this current or eddy, I found it was fpent, and affifted me no farther. However, being between the two great currents, viz. that on the fouth-fide, which had hurried me away, and that on the north, which lay about two leagues on the other fide; I fay, between thele two, in the west of the island, I found the water at least still, and running no way; and having still a breeze of wind fair for me, I kept on steering directly for the island, though not making such fresh way as I did before.

About four o'clock in the afternoon, being then within about a league of the ifland, I found the point of the rocks which occasioned this distance stretching out, as is described before, to the fouthward, and, casting off the current more foutherly, had, of course, made another eddy to the north, and this I found very strong, but not directly setting the way my course lay, which was due west, but almost full north. However, having a fresh gale, I stretched across this eddy, stanting north-west, and in about an hour came within about a mile of the shore, where, it being smooth water, I soon a got to land.

When I was on shore, I fell on my knees, and gave

God thanks for my deliverance, refolving to lay afide all thoughts of my deliverance by my boat; and refreshing myfelf with fuch things as I had, I brought my boat close to the shore, in a little cove that I had spied under some trees, and laid me down to sleep, being quite spent with the labour and fatigue of the voyage.

I was now at a great lofs which way to get home with my boat; I had run fo much hazard, and knew too much the case to think of attempting it by the way I went out; and what might be at the other fide (I mean, the west side) I knew not, nor had I any mind to run any more ventures; fo, I only refolved in the morning to make my way westward along the shore, and to fee if there was no creek where I might lay up my frigate in fafety, so as to have her again if I wanted her. In about three miles, or thereabouts, coafting the shore, I came to a very good inlet or bay, about a mile over, which narrowed till it came to a very little rivulet or brook, where I found a convenient harbour for my boat, and where she lay as if she had been in a little dock made on purpose for her; here I put in, and having stowed my boat very safe, I went on shore to look about me, and fee where I was.

I foon found I had but a little passed by the place where I had been before, when I travelled on foot to that shore; so taking nothing out of my boat, but my gun and my umbrella, for it was exceeding hot, I began to march: the way was comfortable enough, after such a voyage as I had been; and I reached my old bower in the evening, where I found everything standing as I left it; for I always kept it in good order, be-

ing, as I faid before, my country house.

I got over the fence, and laid me down in the shade to rest my limbs, for I was very weary, and fell assep: but judge if you can, you, that read my story, what a surprize I must have been in, when I was awaked out of my sleep by a voice calling me by my name several times, Robin, Robin, Robin Crusce! poor Robin Crusce.

Vol. I. Where

Where are you, Robin Crusoe? Where are you

Where have you been?

I was fo fast asleep at first, being fatigued with row ing, or paddling, as it is called, the first part of the da and walking the latter part, that I did not awake the roughly; and dozing between fleeping and wakin, thought I dreamed that fomebody spoke to me: but : the voice continued to repeat, 'Robin Crusoe! Rob Crusoe!' at last I began to awake more perfectly, at was at first dreadfully frighted, and started up in the w most consternation: but no sooner were my eyes oper than I faw my Pol fitting on the top of the hedge, and immediately knew that this was he that spoke to me; for just in such bemoaning language I had used to tall to him, and teach him; and he had learned it fo perfeetly, that he would fit upon my finger, and lay his bill close to my face, and cry- Poor Robin Crusoe where are you! where have you been! how came you here!' and fuch things as I had taught him.

However, even though I knew it was the parrot, and that indeed it could be nobody elfe, it was a good while before I could compose myself. First, I was amaze how the creature got thither, and then how he shoul just keep about the place, and no where else: but as was well satisfied it could be nobody but onest Pol, agot it over; and holding out my hand, and calling him by his name, Pol, the sociable, came to me, and sa upon my thumb, as he used to do, and continued talking to me, 'Poor Robin Crusoe;' and how did I come here; and, where I had been; just as if he had been

overjoyed to fee me again.

I had now enough of rambling to fea, and continued for some days in a very quiet state, reflecting on the danger I had been in: I would have been very glad to have had my boat again on my fide of the siland, but I knew not how it was practicable to get it about; as to the east-fide of the siland, which I had gone round, I knew well enough there was no venturing that way; my very heart would shrink, and my very blood run chill, t

hink of it; and to the other fide of the island, I did not know how it might be there; but supposing the curent ran with the same force against the shore at the alt, as it passed by it on the other, I might run the me risque of being driven down the stream, and cared by the island, as I had been before of being cared away from it; fo, with these thoughts, I contented yfelf to be without any boat, though it had been the · roduct of so many months labour to make it, and of many more to get it into the fea.

In this government of my temper I remained near a 'ear, lived a very fedate retired life, as you may well appose; and my thoughts, being much composed as to my condition, and fully comforted in refigning myfelf o the dispositions of Providence, I thought I lived very happily in all things, except that of fociety.

I improved myfelf, in this time, in all the mechaic exercifes which my necessities put me upon applyng myself to; and, I believe, could, upon occasion, ave made a very good carpenter, especially considering

ow few tools I had.

Befides this, I arrived at an unexpected perfection in ly earthen-ware, and contrived to make them with a heel, which I found infinitely easier and better; berufe I made things round and shapeable, which before vere very aukward and rough in their form. But I hink I never was more vain of my own performance, r more joyful for any thing I found out, than my teing able to make a tobacco-pipe; and though it was very ugly clumfy thing when done, and only burnt ted like other earthen-ware, yet, as it was hard and firm, nd would draw the imoak, I was exceedingly comforted with it: for I had been always used to smoak, and there were pipes in the flip; but I forgot them at first, not knowing there was tobacco in the ifland; and aftervards, when I fearched the ship again, I could not come t any pipes at all.

In my wicker-ware I also improved much, and made undance of necessary baskets, as well as my invention

fuggefted; though they were not very handfome, yet they were convenient for my laying things up in, or fetching things home in. For example, if I killed a goat abroad, I could hang it up in a tree, flay it, and dreis it, and cut it in pieces, and bring it home in a balket; and the like by a turtle; I could cut it up, take, out the eggs, and a piece or two of the flesh, which was enough for me, and bring them home in a basket, and leave the rest behind me: also large deep baskets were my receivers for my corn, which I always rubbed out as soon as it was dry, and cured; and kept it in great baskets instead of a pranary.

I began now to perceive my powder abated confiderably: and this was an article which it was impossible for me to fupply; I therefore began feriously to confider what I mult do when I should have no more powder; that is to say, how I should do to kill any goats. I had, as I observed in the third year of my being here, kept a young kid, and bred her up tame; I was in hopes of getting an he-kid, but I could not by any means bring it to pass, till my kid grew an old goat; and I could never find in my heart to kill her, till she

died at last of mere age.

But being now in the eleventh year of my refidence; and, as I have faid, my ammunition growing low, I fet myfelf to fludy fome art to trap and finare the goats, to fee whether I could not catch fome of them alive; and particularly I wanted a fle-goat great with young.

For this purpose I made snares to hamper them; and I believe they were more than once taken in them; but my tackle was not good, for I had no wire, and always

found them broken, and my bait devoured.

At length I refolved to try a pit-fall; to I dug feveral large pits in the earth, in places where I had observed the goats used to feed, and over these pits I placed hurdles of my own making too, with a great weight upon them; and several times I put ears of barley and dry rice, without setting the trap; and I could easily perceive, that the goats had gone in and eaten

up the corn. At length, I fet three traps in one night, and going the next morning, I found them all standing, and yet the bait eaten and gone : this was very difcouraging; however, I altered my traps; and, going one morning to fee my traps, I found, in one of them, a large old he-goat; and, in one of the others, three kids, a male and two females.

As to the old one, I knew not what to do with him; he was so fierce I durst not go into the pit to him; that is to fay, to go about to bring him away alive, which was what I wanted; I could have killed him, but that was not my buliness, nor would it answer my end; fo I e'en let him out, and he ran away greatly frightened; but I did not then know what I afterwards learned, that lunger would tame a lion: if I had let him stay there three or four days without food, and then have carried him fome water to drink, and then a little corn, he would have been as tame as one of the kids; for they are mighty fagacious, tractable creatures, where they

However, for the present, I let him go, knowing no better at that time; I then went to the three kids; and taking them one by one, I tied them with strings together,

and with fome difficulty brought them all home.

It was some time before they would feed, but throwing them some sweet corn, it tempted them, and they began to be tame; and now I found, that if I expected to supply myself with goats-flesh, when I had no powder or that left, breeding fome up tame was my only way, when perhaps I might have them about my house like a flock of sheep.

But then it occurred to me, that I must keep the tame from the wild, or elfe they would always run wild when they grew up; and the only way for this was to have fome inclosed piece of ground well fenced, either with hedge or pale, to keep them up fo effectually, that those within might not break out, or those without

break in.

This was a great undertaking for one pair of hands; yet as I faw there was an ablolute necessity of doing it, my first piece of work was to find out a proper piece of ground, viz. where there was likely to be herbage for them to eat, water for them to drink, and cover to

keep them from the fun.

Thole who understand such inclosures will think I had very little contrivance, when I pitched upon a place to very extensive, it being a plain open piece of meadow-land, or favannah, (as our people call it in the western colonies) which had two or three little drills of fresh water in it, and at one end was very woody; I fay, they will finile at my forecast, when I shall tell them I began my inclosing of this piece of ground in fuch a manner, that my hedge or pale must have been at least two miles about; nor was the madness of it so great as to the compais; for if it was ten miles about, I was like to have time enough to do it in; but I did not confider, that my goats would be as wild in fo much compals, as if they had had the whole island; and I should have so much room to chase them in, that I thould never catch them.

My hedge was begun and carried on, I believe, about fifty yards, when this thought occurred to me; fo I ftopped fhort, and refolved to inclose a piece of about one hundred and fifty yards in length, and one hundred yards in breadth, which, as it would maintain as many as I should have in any reasonable time, so, as my stock increased, I could add more ground to my in-

clofure.

This was acting with fome prudence, and I went to work with courage; I was about three months hedging in the first piece; and, till I had done it, I tethered the three kids in the best part of it, and used them to feed as near me as possible, to make them familiar; and very often I would go and carry them some ears of barley, or an handful of rice, and feed them out of my hand; so that after my inclosure was sinished, and I let

them

them loofe, they would follow me up and down, bleat-

ing after me for an handful of corn.

This answered my end, and in about a year and a half, I had a flock of about twelve goats, kids and all; and in two years more I had three and forty, besides several I killed for food. Being thus successful, I inclosed five several pieces of ground to seed them in, with little pens to drive them into, to take them as I had occasion; and gates out of one piece of ground into another.

But this was not all; for now I not only had goats flesh to feed on when I pleased, but milk likewise; which, indeed, was an article I had not thought of, and which, when it came into my thoughns, was really an agreeable surprize; for now I fet up my dairy, and had so nature, who gives supplies of food to every creature, dictates even naturally how to make use of it; so I, that never milked a cow, much less a goat, or saw butter or cheese made, very readily and handily, though after a great many essays and milearriages, made me both butter and cheese at last, and never wanted it

How mercifully can our great Creator treat his creatures, even in those conditions in which they feemed to be overwhelmed in defiruction! How can be fiveeten the bitterest providences, and give us cause to praise him for dungeons and prisons! What a table was here spread for me in a wilderness, where I saw nothing at

first but to perish for hunger!

It would have made a itoick fmile, to have feen me and my little family fit down to dinner: there was my majety, the prince and lord of the whole illand; I had the lives of all my fubjects at abfolute command; I could hang, draw, give liberty, and take it away, and no rebels among all my fubjects.

Then, to see how like a king I dined too, all alone, attended by my servants! Pol, as if he had been my favourite, was the only creature that could talk to me;

my dog, which was now grown very old and crazy, and found no species to multiply his kind upon, fat always at my right-hand; and two cats, one on each fide of the table, expecting now and then a bit from my hand,

as a mark of special favour.

But these were not the two eats which I brought on shore at first; for they were both dead, and had been interred near my habitation by my own hands; and one of them having multiplied by I know not what kind of creature, these were two which I preserved tame, whereas the rest ran wild into the woods, and became indeed troublesome to me at last; for they would often come into my house, and plunder me, till at last I was obliged to shoot them; at length they less me with this attendance, and in this plentiful manner I lived; neither could I be said to want any thing but society, and of that, in some time after this, I was like to have too much.

I was formething impatient, as I have observed, to have the use of my boat, though very loth to run any more hazard: and therefore, fometimes, I fat contriving ways to get her about the island, and at other times I fat myfelf down contented enough without her. But I had a strange uneafiness in my mind to go down to the point of the ifland, where, as I have faid, in my last ramble, I went up the hill to see how the shore lay, and how the current let, that I might fee what I had to do: this inclination increased upon me every day, and at length I resolved to travel thither by land; and following the edge of the shore, I did so; but had any ne in England been to meet fuch a man as I was, it must either have frighted him, or raifed a great deal of laughter; and as I frequently flood still to look at myfelf, I could not but finile at the notion of my traveling through Yorkshire, with such an equipage, and in fuch a drefs. Be pleased to take a sketch of my figure, as follows-

I had a great high, shapeless cap, made of goat's skin, with a stap hanging down behind, as well to keep

the fun from me, as to shoot the rain off from running into my neck; nothing being so hurtful in these chmates as the rain upon the flesh under the cloaths.

I had a short jacket of goat's skin, the skirts coming down to about the middle of my thighs; and a pair of open-kneed breeches of the same: the breeches were made of the skin of an old he goat, whose hair hung down such a length on each side, that, like Pantaloon's it reached to the middle of my legs. Stockings and shoes I had none; but I had made me a pair of something, I scarce knew what to call them, like buskins, to slap over my legs, and lace on either side like spatterdashes, but of a most barbarous shape: as indeed

were all the reft of my cloaths.

I had on a broad belt of goat's fkin dried, which I drew together with two thongs of the fame, instead of buckles, and, in a kind of a frog on either file of this, instead of a sword and dagger, hung a little saw and an hatchet, one on one fide, and one on the other: I had another belt, not so broad, and saftened in the same manner, which hung over my fhoulder; and at the end of it, under my left arm, hung two pouches, both made of goat's fkin; in one of which hung my powder, in the other my shot: at my back I carried my basket, on my thoulder my gun, and over my head a great, clumfy, ugly goat-fkin umbrella, but which, after all, was the most necessary thing I had about me, next to my gun: as for my face, the colour of it was really not so Mulatto-like, as one might expect from a man not at all careful of it, and living within nine or ten degre s of the equinox. My beard I had once fuffered to grow till it was about a quarter of a yard long: but as I had both feiffars and razors fufficient, I had cut it pretty fhort, except what grew on my upper-lip, which I had trimmed into a large pair of Mahometan whifkers, fuch as I had observed worn by some Turks, whom I law at Sallee; for the Moors did not wear fuch though the Turks did: of these mustachios, or whiskers, I will not tay they were long enough to hang my hat

upon them; but they were of length and shape monstrous enough, and such as in England would have passed for

frightful.

But all this is by the bye: for as to my figure, I had fo few to observe me, that it was of no manner of consequence; so I say no more to that part. In this kind of figure I went my new journey, and was out five or fix days. I travelled first along the sea shore, directly to the place where I first brought my boat to an anchor to get up upon the rocks; and, having no boat now to take care of, I went over the land a nearer way, to the same height that I was upon before; when, looking forward to the point of the rock which lay out, and which I was to double with my boat, I was surprized to find the sea all smooth and quiet; no ripling, no motion, no current, any more there than in other places.

I was at a firange loss to understand this, and refolved to spend some time in endeavouring to discover if nothing from the fets of the tide had occasioned it: but I was foon convinced how it was, viz. that the tide of ebb fetting from the west, and joining with the current of waters from some great river on the shore, must be the occasion of this current; and that according as the wind blew more forcibly from the west, or from the north this current came near, or went farther from the shore; for, waiting thereabouts till evening, I went up to the rock again, and then the tide of ebb being made, I plainly faw the current again as before, only that it ran farther off, being near half a league from the shore; whereas, in my case, it fet close upon the shore, and hurried me in my canoe along with it, which at another time it would not have done.

This observation convinced me I had nothing to do but to observe the ebbing and flowing of the tide, and I might very easily bring my boat about the island: but when I began to think of putting it in practice, I had such a terror upon my spirits, at the remembrance of the danger I had been in, that I could not think of it again with any patience; but, on the contrary, I took

up another resolution, which was more safe, though more laborious; and this was, that I would build, or rather make me another periagua, or canoe; and so have one for one side of the island, and one for the other.

You are to understand, that I now had, as I may call it, two plantations in the island; one, my little fortification or tent, with the wall about it, under the rock, with the cave behind me, which by this time I had enlarged into several apartments, one within another. One of these, which was the driest and largest, and had a door out beyond my wall or fortification, that is to say, beyond where my wall joined to the rock, was filled up with the largest earthern pots, of which I have given an account, and with fourteen or fifteen great baskets, which would hold sive or fix bushels each, where I laid up my stores of provision, especially my corn; some in the ear, cut off short from the straw, and the other rubbed out with my hand.

As for my wall, made as before, with long stakes or piles, those piles grew all like trees, and were by this time become so large, and spread so very much, that there was not the least appearance, to any one's view,

of any habitation behind them.

Near this dwelling, but a little farther within the land, and upon lower ground, lay my two pieces of cornground; which I kept duly cultivated and fowed, and which regularly yielded me their harvest in its season; and whenever I had occasion for more corn, I had more land adjoining, the foil of which was equally well calculated for cultivation.

Befides this, there was my country-feat, I had now a tolerable plantation also; for first, I had my little bower as I called it, which I kept in repair; that is to say, I kept the hedge which circled it in constantly fitted up to its usual height, the ladder standing always in the minde; I kept the trees, which at first were no more than my stakes, but were now grown very sum and tall, always so cut, that they might spread, grow thick,

and make the more agreeable shade, which they did effectually to my mind. In the middle of this I had my tent always standing, being a piece of a fail spread over poles set up for that purpose, and which never wanted any repair or renewing; and under this I made me a squab or couch, with the skins of the creatures I had killed, and with other soft things, and a blanket laid on them, such as belonged to our fea-bedding, which I had saved, and a great warch-coat to cover me; and here, whenever I had occasion to be absent from my chief seat, I took up my country habitation.

Adjoining to this, I had my inclosures for my cattle; that is to say, my goats: and as I had taken an inconceivable deal of pains to fence and inclose this ground, I was so uneasy to see it not kept entire, lest the goats should break through, that I never lest off, till with infinite labour I had struck the outside of the hedge so full of small stakes, and so near to one another, that it was rather a pale than a hedge, and there was scarce room to put a hand through between them which, afterwards, when those stakes grew, as they all did in the next rainy season, made the inclosure strong,

like a wall; indeed, ftronger than any wall.

This will testify for me that I was not idle, and that I spared no pains to bring to pass whatever appeared necessary for my comfortable support; for I considered the keeping up a breed of tame creatures thus at my hand, would be a living magazine of slesh, milk, butter, and cheese, for me, as long as I lived in the place, if it were to be forty years; and that keeping them in my reach, depended entirely upon my perfecting my inclosures to such a degree, that I might be sure of keeping them together; which by this method, indeed, I to effectually secured, that when these little stakes began to grow, I had planted them so very thick I was forced to pull some of them up again.

In this place also I had my grapes growing, which I principally depended on for my winter store of raisins, and which I never failed to preserve very carefully, as

the best and most agreeable dainty of my whole diet; and indeed they were not agreeable only, but physical, wholesome, nourishing, and refreshing to the last degree.

As this was also about half-way between my other habitation and the place where I had laid up my boat, I generally staid and lay here in my way thither; for I used frequently to visit my boat, and I kept all things about or belonging to her in very good order; sometimes I went out in her to divert myself, but no more hazardous voyages would I go, nor scarce ever above a stone's cast or two from the shore, I was so apprehensive of being burried out of my knowledge again by the currents or winds, or any other accident. But now I

come to a new scene of my life.

It happened one day, about noon, going towards my boat, I was exceedingly furprized with the print of a man's naked foot on the fliore, which was very plain to be feen in the fand: I flood like one thunderstruck, or as if I had feen an apparition; I liftened, I looked round me; I could hear nothing, nor fee any thing; I went up to a riling ground to look farther; I went up the shore, and down the shore, but it was all one, I could fee no other impression but that one. I went to it again to fee if there were any more, and to observe if it might not be my fancy; but there was no room for that, for there was exactly the very print of a foot, toes, heel, and every part of a foot; how it came thither I knew not, nor could in the leaft imagine. But, after innumerable futtering thoughts, like a man perfectly confused and distracted, I came home to my fortification, not feeling, as we fay, the ground I went on, but terrified to the last degree, looking behind me at every two or three fteps, mistaking every bush or tree, and fancying every stump at a distance to be a man; nor is it possible to describe how many various shapes an affrighted imagination represented things to me in; how many wild ideas were formed every moment in my fancy, and what frrange unaccountable thoughts came into my mind by the way. Vol. I When

When I came to my caftle, for fo I think I called it ever after this, I fled into it like one purfued; whether I went over by the ladder, as first contrived, or went in at the hole in the rock, which I called a door, I cannot remember; for never frighted hare fled to cover, or fox to earth, with more terror of mind than I to this retreat.

I had no fleep that night; the farther I was from the occasion of my fright, the greater my apprehensions were; which is fomething contrary to the nature of fuch things, and especially to the usual practice of all creatures in fear. But I was so embarrassed with my own frightful ideas of the thing, that I formed nothing but difinal imaginations to myfelf, even though I was now a great way off it. Sometimes I fancied it must be the devil; and reason joined in with me upon this suppolition: for how should any other thing in human shape come into the place? Where was the vessel that brought them? What marks were there of any other footsteps? And how was it possible a man should come there? But then to think that Satan should take human shape upon him in such a place, where there could be no manner of occasion for it, but to leave the print of his foot behind him, and that even for no purpose too, (for he could not be fure I should see it;) this was an amazement the other way: I confidered that the devil might have found out abundance of other ways to have terrified me, than this of the fingle print of a foot; that as I lived quite on the other fide of the ifland, he would never have been so simple to leave a mark in 3 place where it was ten thousand to one whether I should ever fee it or not; and in the fand too, which the first furge of the sea upon an high wind would have defaced entirely: All this feemed inconfifent with the thing itself, and with all notions we usually entertain of the fubtlety of the devil.

Abundance of fuch things as these affilted to argue me out of all apprehensions of its being the devil: and I presently concluded then, that it must be fome more dangerous creature, viz. that it must be some of the savages of the main land over-against me, who had wandered out to sea in their canoes; and, either driven by the currents, or by contrary winds, had made the island; and had been on shore, but were gone away again to sea, being as loth, perhaps, to have staid in this desolate island, as I would have been to have had them.

While these reflections were rolling upon my mind, I was very thankful in my thought, that I was so happy as not to be thereabouts at that time, or that they did not see my boat, by which they would have concluded, that some inhabitants had been in the place, and, perhaps, have searched farther for me. Then terrible thoughts racked my imaginations about their having found my boat, and that there were people here; and that if so, I should certainly have them come again in greater numbers, and devour me; that if it should happen so that they should not find me, yet they would find my inclosure, destroy all my corn, carry away all my flock of tame goats, and I should perish at last for mere want.

Thus my fear banished all my religious hope; all that former confidence in God, which was founded upon such wonderful experience, as I had met with of his goodness, now vanished; as if he that had fed me by miracle hitherto could not preserve by his power the provision which he had made for me by his goodness. I reproached myself for my folly in not sowing more corn one year than would just serve me till the next season, as if no accident could intervene to prevent my enjoying the crop that was upon the ground; and this I thought so just a reproof, that I resolved for the future to have two or three years corn before-hand, so that whatever might come, I might not perish for want of bread.

How strange a chequer-work of Providence is the life of man! and by what secret differing springs are the affections hurried about, as differing circumstances pre-

Pa

fent! To-day we love what to-morrow we hate; today we feek what to-morrow we flun; to-day we defire what to-morrow we fear, nay, even tremble at the apprehensions of. This was exemplified in me at this time in the most lively manner imaginable; for I, whose only affliction was, that I feemed banished from human iociety, that I was alone circumferibed by the boundless ocean, cut off from mankind, and condemned to what I call a filent life: that I was as one whom Heaven thought not warthy to be numbered among the living, or to appear among the reft of his creatures; that to have feen one of my own faccies would have feemed to me a raif-Heaven itself, next to the supreme bleshing of falvation, very apprehensions of seeing a man, and was ready to fink into the ground at but the fladow or filent appearance of a man's having fet his foot on the island.

Such is the uneven state of human life; and it afforded me a great many curious speculations afterwards, when I had a little recovered my first superize; I considered that this was the station of life the infinitely wise and good providence of God had determined for me; that as I could not soresee what the ends of Divine Wishom might be in all this, so I was not to dispute his sovereignty, who, as I was his creature, had an uncloubted right by creation to govern and dispose of me absolutely as he thought fit; and who, as I was a creature who had offended him, had likewise a judicial right to condemn me to what punishment he thought fit; and that it was my part to submit to bear his indignation, because I

had finned against him.

I then reflected, that God, who was not only righteous, but omnipotent, as he had thought fit thus to punish and afflict me, so he was able to deliver me; that if he did not think fit to do it, it was my unquestioned duty to refign mylelf absolutely and entirely to his will; and, on the other hand, it was my duty also to hope in him, pray to him, and quietly to attend the dictates and directions of his daily providence.

These thoughts took me up many hours, days, nay, I may say, weeks and months; and one particular effect of my cogitations on this occasion, I cannot omit; viz. one morning early, lying in my bed, and filled with thoughts about my danger from the appearance of savages, I found it discomposed me very much: upon which those words of the Scripture came into my thoughts—" Call upon me in the day of trouble, and I will deliver "thee, and thou shalt glorify me."

Upon this, rifing chearfully out of my bed, my heart was not only comforted, but I was guided and encouraged to pray earnefly to Godfor deliverance. When I had done praying, I took up my bible, and opening it to read, the first words that presented themselves to me were—" Wait on the Lord, and be of good cheer, and "he shall strengthen thy heart: wait, I say, on the "Lord." It is impossible to express the comfort this gave me; and, in return, I thankfully laid down the book, and was no more sad; at least, not on

that occasion.

In the middle of these cogitations, apprehensions, and reflections, it came into my thoughts one day, that all this might be a mere chimera of my own, and that this foot might be the print of my own foot, when I came on shore from my boat. This cheared me up a little too, and I began to perfuade myself it was all a delusion; that it was nothing else but my own foot; and why might not I come that way from the boat, as well as I was going that way to the boat? Again, I considered also, that I could by no means tell for certain where I had trod, and where I had not; and that if at last this was only the print of my own foot, I had played the part of those fools, who strive to make stories of spectres and apparitions, and then are themselves frighted at them more than any body else.

Now I began to take courage, and to peep abroad again; for I had not fibred out of my earlie for three days and nights, fo that I began to feem fhort of provision; for I had little or nothing within doors, but

fome barley-cakes and water. Then I knew that my goats wanted to be milked too, which ufually was my evening diversion: and the poor creatures were in great pain and inconvenience for want of it; and indeed it almost spoiled some of them, and almost dried up their milk.

Heartening myfelf therefore with the belief that this was nothing but the print of one of my own feet, (and fo I might be truly faid to ftart atimy own fhadow) I began to go abroad again, and went to my country-house to milk my flock; but to ee with what fear I went forward, how often I looked behind me, how I was ready, every now and then, to lay down my basket and run for my life, it would have made any one have thought I was haunted with an evil conscience, or that I had been lately most terribly frighted; and so indeed I had.

However, as I went down thus two or three days, and having feen nothing, I began to be a little bolder, and to think there was really nothing in it but my own imagination; but I could not perfuade myfelf fully of this, till I should go down to the shore again, and see this print of a foot, and measure it by my own, and fee if there was any fimilitude or fitness, that I might be aifured it was my own foot: but when I came to the place first, it appeared evidently to me, that when I laid up my boat, I could not possibly be on shore any where thereabouts. Secondly, when I came to measure the mark with my own foot, I found my foot not so large by a great deal. Both these things filled my head with new imaginations, and gave me the vapours again to the highest degree; fo that I shook with cold, like one in an ague, and went home again, filled with the belief, that fome man or men had been on shore there; or, in short, that the island was inhabited, and I might be surprized before I was aware; and what course to take for my lecurity I knew not.

O what ridiculous resolutions men take, when possed fed with fear! It deprives them of the use of those means which reason offers for their relief. The first

thing I proposed to myself was, to throw down my inclosures, and turn all my tame cattle wild into the woods, that the enemy might not find them, and then frequent the island in prospect of the same or the like booty; then to the simple thing of digging up my two corn-fields, that they might not find such a grain there, and still be prompted to frequent the island; then to demolish my bower and tent, that they might not see any vestiges of my habitation, and be prompted to look farther, in or-

der to find out the perfons inhabiting.

These were the subjects of the first night's cogitation, after I was come home again, while the apprehenfions which had fo over-run my mind were fresh upon me, and my head was full of vapours, as above. fear of danger is ten thousand times more terrifying than danger itself when apparent to the eyes; and we find the burden of anxiety greater, by much, than the evil which we are anxious about; but, which was worfe than all this, I had not that relief in this trouble for the refignation I used to practile, that I hoped to have. I looked, I thought, like Saul, who complained not only that the Philistines were upon him, but that God had for laken him; for I did not now take due ways to compose my mind, by crying to God in my distress, and refting upon his providence, as I had done before, for my defence and deliverance; which, if I had done, I had, at least, been more chearfully supported under this new furprize, and perhaps carried through it with more

This confusion of my thoughts kept me awake all night; but in the morning I fell asleep, and having, by the employment of my mind, been, as it were, tired, and my ipnits exhausted, I slept very soundly, and awaked much better composed than I had ever been before: and now I began to think sedately; and, upon the utmost debate with myself, I concluded, that this island, which was so exceeding pleasant, fruitful, and no farther from the main land thin as I had seen, was not so entirely abandoned as I might imagine; that, although there

were no flated inhabitants who lived on the foot, yet that there might fometimes come boats off from the shore: who, either with defign, or perhaps never but when they were driven by cross winds, might come to this place.

That I had lived here fifteen years now, and had not met with the leaft fladow or figure of any people before; and that if at any time they fhould be driven here, it was probable they went away again as foon as they could, feeing they had never thought fit to fix there upon any

occasion to this time.

That the most I could suggest danger from was, any casual landing of straggling people from the main; who, as it was likely, if they were driven hither, were here against their will; so that they made no stay but went off again with all possible speed, seldom remaining one night on shore, less they should not have the help of the tides and day-light back again; and that therefore I had nothing to do but to consider of some safe retreat, incase

I should see any savages land upon the spot.

Now I began to repent, that I had dug my cave for large, as to bring a door through again, which door, as I faid, came out beyond where my fortification joined to the rock. Upon maturely confidering this, therefore, I refolved to draw me a fecond fortification, in the fame manner of a femi-circle, at a diffance from my wall, just where I had planted a double row of trees, about twelve years before, of which I made mention. Thefe trees having been planted fo thick before, there wanted but a few piles to be driven between them, that they might be thicker and ftronger, and my wall foon finished.

I had now a double wall, and my outer wall was thickened with pieces of timber, old cables, and every thing I could think of to make it firong; having in it feven holes, each large enough to put my arm through. In the infide of this I thickened my wall to about ten feet, continually bringing earth out of my cave, and laying it at the foot of the wall, and walking upon it; and through the feven holes I contrived to plant the multiputs, of which I took notice, that I got feven on there

out of the flip; thefe, I fay, I planted like my cannon, and fitted them into frames that held them like a carriage, fo that I could fire all the feven guns in two minutes time. This wall I was many a weary month in finishing, and yet never thought myfelf fafe till it was done.

When this was done, I fluck all the ground without my wall, for a great diffance every way, as full with stakes or sticks of the ofter-like wood, which I found so apt to grow, as they could well stand; infonuch, that I believe I might set in near twenty thousand, leaving a pretty large space between them and my wall, that I might have room to see an enemy, and they might have no shelter from the young trees, if they attempted to ap-

proach my outer wall.

Thus, in two years I had a thick grove; and in five or fix years a wood before my dwelling, grown to monftrous thick and ffrong, that it was indeed perfectly impaffable; and no man would ever imagine there was any thing behind it, much lefs an habitation. As for the way I propoted mylelf to go in and out, (for I left no avenue) it was by fetting two ladders, one to a part of the rock which was low, and then broke in, and left room to place another ladder upon that; so when the two ladders were taken down, no man living could come down without injuring himlelf; and if they had come down, they were fill on the out-fide of my outer wall.

Thus I took all the measures human prudence could fuggest for my preservation; and it will be seen at length, they were not altogether without just reason; though I foresaw nothing at that time more than my mere sear

fuggefied.

While this was doing, I was not altogether careless of my other affairs; for I had a great concern upon me for my little herd of goats; they were not only a prefent supply to me upon every occasion, and began to be sufficient to me, without the expence of powder and shot, but also abated the fatigue of my hunting after the wild ones; and I was unwilling to lose the advantage of them, and to have them all to nurse up again.

To

To this purpole, after long confideration, I could think of but two ways to preferve them; one was, to find another convenient place to dig a cave under-ground, and to drive them into it every night; and the other was, to inclose two or three little bits of land, remote from one another, and as much concealed as I could, where I might keep about half a dozen young goats in each place; fo that if any difaster happened to the flock in general, I might be able to raise them again with little trouble and time; and this, though it would require a great deal of time and labour, I thought was the most rational design.

Accordingly, I spent some time to find out the most retired parts of the island; and pitched upon one, which was as private indeed as my heart could wish; for it was a little damp piece of ground in the middle of the hollow and thick woods, where, as is observed, I almost lost myself once before, endeavouring to come back that way from the eastern part of the island. Here I found a clear piece of land near three acres, so introunded with woods, that it was almost an inclosure by nature; at least, it did not want near so much labour to make it so, as the other pieces of ground I had worked so hard ar.

I immediately went to work with this piece of ground, and in lefs than a month, I had to fenced it round, that my flock or herd, call it which you pleafe, which were not fo wild now as at first they might be supposed to be, were well enough secured in it. So, without any farther delay, I removed ten she goats and two he goats to this piece; and when they were there, I continued to perfect the sence, till I had made it as secure as the other, which, however, I did at more leidure, and it took me up more time by a great deal.

I was at the expence of all this labour from my apprehensions on account of the print of a man's foot which I had seen; for, as yet I never saw any human creature come near the island. I had now lived two years under these disagreeable apprehensions, which, indeed, made my life much less comfortable than it was before; as

may be imagined, by any who know what it is to live in the constant share of the fear of man; and this I must observe with grief too, that the discomposure of my mind had too great impressions also upon the religious part of my thoughts, for the dread and terror of falling into the hands of favoges and cannibals lay fo much upon my fpirits, that I feldom found myfelf in a due temper for application to my Maker; at least, not with the fedate calmness and refignation of foul which I was accustomed to do. I rather prayed to God as under great affliction and preffure of mind, furrounded with danger, and in expectation every night of being murdered and devoured before morning; and I must testify from my experience, that a temper of peace, thankfulnefs, love, and affection, is much the more proper frame for prayer than that of terror and discomposure; and that under the dread of milichief impending, a man is no more fit for a comforting performance of the duty of praving to God, than he is for repentance on a fick-bed; for the discompanies affect the mind as the others do the body; and the discomposure of the mind must neceffarily be as great a difability as that of the body, and much greater; praying to God being properly an act of

But to go on. After I had thus fecured one part of my little hving fock, I went about the whole island, fearching for another private place to make such another deposit; when wandering more to the west point of the island than I had ever done yet, and looking out to sea, I thought I saw a boat upon the sea, at a great distance. I had tound a perspective-glass or two, in one of the seamen's chests, which I saved out of our ship; but I had it not about me, and this was so remote, that I could not tell what to make of it, shough I looked at it till my eyes were not able to look any longer; whether it was a boat, or not, I do not know; but as I descended from the hill, I could see no more of it, so I gave it over; only resolved to go no more without a perspective-glass

in my pocket.

When I was come down the hill to the end of the island, where indeed I had never been before, I was soon convinced, that seeing the print of a man's foot was not such a strange thing in the island as I imagined; and, but that it was a special providence that I was cast upon the side of the island, where the savages never came, I should easily have known, that nothing was more frequent than for the canoes from the main, when they happened to be a little too far out at sea, to shoot over to that side of the island for harbour; likewise, as they often met, and fought in their canoes, the victors, having taken any prisoners, would bring them over to this shore, where, according to their dreadful customs, being all canibals, they would kill and eat them. Of which hereafter.

When I was come down the hill to the shore, being the S. W. point of the siland, I was perfectly confounded and amazed; nor is it pessible for me to express the horror of my mind, at seeing the shore spread with skulls, hands, seet, and other bones of human bodies; and, particularly, I observed a place where there had been a fire made, and a circle dug in the earth, like a cock-pit, where it is to be supposed the savage wretches had at down to their inhuman featings upon the bodies.

of their fellow-creatures.

I was to aftonished with the fight of these things, that I entertained no notions of any danger to mylelf from it for a long while; all my apprehensions were buried in the thoughts of such a pitch of inhuman bruralty, and the horror of the degeneracy of human nature; which, though I had heard of often, yet I never had is near a view of before; in short, I turned away my face from the horrid spectacle; I grew sick, and was just at the point of fainting, when nature discharged the disorder from my stomach; and, having vomited with an uncommon violence, I was a little relieved, but could not bear to stay in the place a moment; so I got up the hill again with all the speed I could, and walked on towards my own habitation.

When

164 When I came a little out of that part of the island, I flood still some time amazed; and then recovering myfelf, I looked up with the utmost affection of my foul, and, with a flood of tears in my eyes, gave God thanks, that had east my first lot in a part of the world, where I was diffinguished from such dreadful creatures as thefe; and that though I had efteemed my prefent condition very miserable, had yet given me so many comforts in it, that I had still more to give thanks for, than to complain of; and this above all, that I had, even in this miserable condition, been comforted with the knowledge of Himfelf, and the hope of His bleffing, which was

a felicity more than fufficiently equivalent to all the mifery which I had fuffered, or could fuffer.

In this frame of thankfulnels I went home to my caftle, and began to be much easier now, as to the safety of my circumstances, than ever I was before; for I obferved, that these wretches never came to this island in fearch of what they could get; perhaps not feeking, not wanting, or not expecting any thing here; and having often, no doubt, been up in the covered woody part of it, without finding any thing to their purpole. I knew I had been here now almost eighteen years, and never faw the least footsteps of a human creature there before; and might be here eighteen more as entirely concealed as I was now, if I did not discover myself to them, which I had no manner of occasion to do, it being my only buliness to keep myself entirely concealed where I was, unless I found a better fort of creatures than canibals to make myfelf known to.

Yet I entertained fuch an abhorrence of the favage wretches. I have been speaking of, and of the inhuman cultom of their devouring and eating one another up, that I continued pensive and fad, and kept close within my own circle for almost two years after this. When I fay my own circle, I mean by it, my three plantations; viz. my castle, my country-seat, which I called my bower, and my inclosure in the woods; nor did I look after this for any other use, than as an inclosure for

my Vol. I.

my goats; for the aversion which nature gave me to these horrid wretches was such, that I was as fearful of seeing them, as of seeing the devil himself; nor did I so much as go to look after my boar in all this time, but began rather to consider of making me another; for I could not think of ever making any more attempts to bring the other boat round the stand, left I should meet with some of those creatures at sea, in which, if I happened to fall into their hands, I knew what would have been my lot.

Time, however, and the fatisfaction I had, that I was in no danger of being discovered by these people, foon wore off my uneafine's about them; and I began to live just in the same composed manner as before; only with this difference, that I nied more caution, and kept my eves more about me than I did before, left I should happen to be feen by any of them; and, particularly, I was more cautious of firing my gun, lest any of them on the island should happen to hear it; and it was therefore a very good providence to me, that I had furnished myfelf with a tame breed of goats, that I had no need to hunt any more about the woods, or fhoot at them; and if I did catch any more of them after this, it was by traps and fnares, as I had done before; fo that for two years after this, I believe, I did not fire my gun of once, though I never went out without it; and, which was more, as I had faved three piftols out of the ship, I always carried them out with me, or, at leaft, two of them, flicking them in my goat-fkin belt. I likewist furnished up one of the great cutlasses that I had out of the ship, and made me a belt to put it in also; so that ! was now a most formidable fellow to look at, when I went abroad, if you add to the former description of myfelf, the particular of two piffols and a great broad fword hanging at my fide in a belt, but without a

Things going on thus, as I have faid, for fome time I feemed, excepting these cautions, to be reduced to my former calm sedate way of living; all these things

rending to shew me more and more how far my condition was from being miserable, compared to some others; nay, to many other particulars of life, which it might have pleased God to have made my lot. It put me upon reflecting, how little repining there would be among mankind, at any condition of life, if people would rather compare their condition with those that are worfe, in order to be thankful, than be always comparing them with those which are better, to affift their

murmurings and complainings.

As in my present condition there were not really many things which I wanted, for indeed, I thought that the frights I had been in about thele favage wretches, and the concern I felt for my own preservation, had taken off the edge of my invention for my own convenience, and I had dropt a good delign, which I had once bent my thoughts upon; and that was, to try if I could not make some of my barley into malt, and then try to brew myfelf some beer; this was really a whimsical thought, and I reproved myself often for the simplicity of it; for I prefently faw there would be the want of feveral things necessary for making my beer, that it would be impossible for me to fupply; as first, casks to preferve it in, which was a thing that I could never accomplish, though I spent not only many days, but weeks, nay, months, in attempting it, but to no purpole. In the next place, I had no hops to make it keep, no yeaft to make it work, no copper or kettle to make it boil; and yet, had not all thefe things intervened, I mean the frights and terrors I was in about the favages, I had undertaken it, and perhaps, brought it to pals too; for I feldom gave any thing over without accomplishing it, when once I had it in my mind to begin it.

But my invention now ran quite another way; for night and day I could think of nothing, but how I might defroy some of their monsters in their cruel bloody entertainment; and, if possible, fave the victim they should bring hither to destroy. It would take up a larger yolume than this whole work is intended to be,

to let down all the contrivances I invented for deftroying these creatures, or at least frightening them, so it to prevent their coming hither any more: but all was abortive; nothing could be possible to take effect, unless I was to be there to do it myself; and what could one man do among them, when perhaps there might be twenty or thirty of them together, with their darts, or their bows and arrows, with which they could shoot as

true to a mark as I could with my gun?

Sometimes I contrived to dig a hole under the place where they made their fire, and put in five or fix pounds of gun powder; which, when they kindled their fire, would confequently communicate and blow up all that was near it: but, as in the first place I should be very loth to waste so much powder upon them, my store being now within the quantity of a barrel; fo neither could I be fure of its going off at any certain time, when it might furprize them; and, at best, that it would do little more than just blow the fire about their ears, and fright them. but not fufficient to make them forfake the place; fo I laid it afide; and then proposed, that I would fix myfelf in ambush, in some convenient place, with my three guns all double loaded, and, in the middle of their bloody ceremony, let fly at them, when I should be fure to kill or wound perhaps two or three at every thot; and then falling in upon them with my three piltols, and my fword, I made no doubt but that, if there were twenty, I should kill them all: this fancy pleafed my thoughts for some weeks; and I was so full of it, that I often dreamed of it; and fometimes, that I was just going to let fly at them in my sleep.

I went to far with it in my imagination, that I employed myfelf feveral days, to find out proper places to put myfelf in ambufcade, to watch for them; and I went frequently to the place itfelf, which was now grown more familiar to me; and especially while my mind was thus filled with thoughts of revenge, and of a bloody putting twenty or thirty of them to the fword, as I may call it; but the horror I had at the place, and

at the figuals of the barbarous wretches devouring one

another, abated my malice.

Well, at length I found a place in the fide of the hill, where I was fatisfied I might fecurely wait till I faw any of the boats coming; and might then, even before they would be ready to come on fhore, convey myfelf unteen into the thickets of trees, in one of which there was an hollow large enough to conceal me entirely; and where I might fit and observe all their bloody doings, and take my full aim at their heads, when they were so close together as that it would be next to impossible that I should miss my shoot, or that I could fail wounding three or four of them at the first shoot.

In this place, then, I refolved to fix my defign; and accordingly I prepared two mulquets, and my ordinary fowling-piece. The two mulquets I loaded with a brace of flugs each, and four or five finaller buillets, about the fize of pitfol-buillets; and the fowling-piece I loaded with near an handful of fwan-shot, of the largest size; alti loaded my pitfols with about four builets each; and in this posture, well provided with ammunition for a second and third charge, I prepared myself for my

amadition

After I had thus laid the scheme for my design, and, in my imagination, put it in practice, I continually made my tour every morning up to the top of the hill, which was from my castle, as I called it, about three miles, or more, to see if I could observe any boats upon the sea, coming near the island, or standing over towards it; but I began to be fired of this hard duty, after I had for two or three months constantly kept my watch; but came always back without any discovery, there having not, in all that time, been the least appearance, not only on or near the shore, but not on the whole ocean, so far as my eyes or glasses could reach every way.

As long as I kept up my daily tour to the hill, to look out, so long also I kept up the vigour of my defign, and my spirits feemed to be all the time in a suit-

Q 3

able frame for fo outrageous an execution as the killing twenty or thirty naked lavages, for an offence which I had not at all entered into a discussion of in my thoughts, any farther than my passions were at first fired by the horror I conceived at the unnatural custom of the people of that country, who, it feems, had been fuffered by Providence, in His wife disposition of the world, to have no other guide than that of their own abominable and vitiated paffions; and, confequently, were left, and perhaps had been for some ages, to act such horrid things, and receive fuch dreadful customs, as nothing but nature, entirely abandoned of Heaven, and actuated by hellish degeneracy, could have run them into: but now, when, as I have faid, I began to be weary of the fruitless excursions which I had made so long, and fo far, every morning, in vain; fo my opinion of the action itself began to alter; and, with cooler and calmer thoughts, I confidered what it was I was going to engage in; what authority or call I had, to pretend to be judge and executioner upon these men as criminals, whom Heaven had thought fit, for fo many ages, to fuffer, unpunished, to go on, and to be, as it were, the executioners of His judgments upon one another; also how far these people were offenders against me, and what right I had to engage in the quarrel of that blood, which they had fled promifcuoufly one upon another. I debated this very often with myfelf thus-· How do I know what God himself judges in this par-' ticular cafe? It is certain these people do not commit this as a crime; it is not against their own consciences reproving, or their light reproaching them. They do not know it to be an offence, and then commit it 6 in defiance of Divine Justice, as we do in almost all

the fins we commit. They think it no more a crime

to kill a captive taken in war, than we do to kill an ox; nor to eat human flesh, than we do to eat mutfon.

When I had confidered this a little, it followed neceffarily, that I was certainly in the wrong; that thele

people

people were not murderers in the fense that I had before condemned them in my thoughts, any more than those Christians were murderers, who often put to death the prisoners taken in battle, or more frequently, upon many occasions, put whole troops of men to the sword, without giving quarter, though they threw down their

arms and fubmitted.

In the next place, it occurred to me, that albeit the ufage they gave one another was thus brutish and inheman, yet it was nothing tome: these people had done me no injury; that if they attempted to injure me, or I faw it necessary for my immediate preservation to fall upon them, fomething might be faid for it; but that I was yet out of their power, and they had really no knowledge of me, and confequently no defign upon me; and therefore it could not be just for me to fall upon them: that this would justify the conduct of the Spaniards, in all their barbarities practifed in America, where they destroyed millions of these people; who, however they were idolaters and barbarians, and had feveral bloody and barbarous rites in their customs, fuch as facrificing human bodies to their idols, were yet, as to the Spaniards, very innocent people; and that the rooting them out of the country is spoken of with the utmost abhorrence and deteftation, even by the Spaniards themseives, at this time, and by all other Christian nations of Europe, as a mere butchery, a bloody and unnatural piece of cruelty, unjustifiable either to God or man; and fuch as for which the very name of a Spaniard is reckoned to be frightful and terrible to all people of humanity, or of Christian compassion, as if the kingdom of Spain were particularly eminent for the product of a race of men, who were without principles of tenderneis, or the common bowels of pity to the miferable, which is reckoned to be a mark of a generous temper in the mind.

Thefe confiderations really put me to a paufe, and to a kind of full ftop; and I began by little and little to be off of my delign, and to conclude I had taken wrong measures in my resolutions to artack the favages; that it was not my business to meddle with them, unless they first attacked me, and this it was my business, if possible, to prevent; but that, if I were discovered and

attacked, then I knew my duty.

On the other hand, I argued with myfelf, that this really was the way not to deliver myfelf, but entirely to run and defiroy myfelf; for unlefs I was fur to kill every one that not only fhould be on shore at that time, but should ever come on shore afterwards; if but one of them escaped to tell their country-people what had happened, they would come over again by thousands to revenge the death of their fellows; and I should only bring upon myfelf a certain destruction, which at prefent I had no manner of occasion for.

Upon the whole, I concluded, that, neither in principles not in policy. I ought one way or other to concern myleff in this affair: that my bufinefs was, by all possible means, to conceal myleff from them, and not to leave the least figual to them to guess by, that there were any living creatures upon the island; I mean, of

human fhape.

Religion joined in with these thoughts, and I was convinced now, many ways, that I was perfectly out of my dury, when I was laying all my bloody schemes for the destruction of innocent creatures; I mean, innocent as to me; as to the crimes they were guilty of towards one another, I had nothing to do with them; there were national punishments to make a just retribution for national offences; and to bring public judgments upon those who offend in a public manner, by such ways as best please God.

This appeared to clear to me now, that nothing was a greater latislaction to me, than that I had not been fuffered to do a thing which I now faw to much realism to believe would have been no lefs a fin, than that of wilful murder, if I had committed it; and I gave most humble thanks on my knees to God, who had thus delivered me from blood-guiltine(s; befeecking him to

grant me the protection of his providence, that I might not fall into the hands of barbarians; or that I might not lay my hands upon them, unless I had a more clear call from Heaven to do it, in defence of my own life.

In this disposition I continued for near a year; and so far was I from desiring an occasion for falling upon these wretches, that in all that time I never once went up the hill to see whether there were any of them in fight, or to know whether any of them had been on shore there or not; that I might not be tempted to renew any of my contrivances against them, or be provoked by any advantage which might present itself, to fall upon them; only this I did; I went and removed my boat, which I had on the other side the island, and carried it down to the east-end of the whole island, where I ran it into a little cove which I found under some high tocks, and where I knew, by reason of the currents, the savages durst not, at least would not, come with their boats, appon any account whatever.

With my boat I carried away every thing I had left there belonging to her, though not necessary for the bare going thither; viz. a mast and sail, which I had made for her, and a thing like an anchor, but, indeed, which could not be called either anchor or grappling; however, it was the best I could make of its kind. All these I removed, that there might not be the least shadow of any discovery, or appearance of boat, or of any

habitation, upon the illand.

Belides this, I kept mylelf, as I faid, more retired than ever, and feldom went from my cell, other than upon my conftant employment, viz. to milk my fhe-goats, and manage my little flock in the wood; which being on the other part of the island, was quite out of danger: for certain it is, that these savage people, who sometimes haunted this island, never came with thoughts of finding any thing here, and confequently never wandered off from the coast; and I doubt not, but they might have been several times on shore, after my apprehension

prehenfions of them had made me cautious, as well as before; and, indeed, I looked back with fome horror upon the thoughts of what my condition would have been, if I had chopped upon them, and been difcovered before that, when naked and unammed, except with one gun, and that loaded often only with finall flot. It walked every where, peeping about the island; to see what I could get: what a furptize should I have been in, if when I discovered the print of a man's foot, I had instead of that, seen fifteen or twenty savages, and found them pursuing me; and, by the switness of their running, no pessibility of my escaping them!

The thoughts of this fometimes funk my very foul within me, and diffrested my mind so much, that I could not foon recover it; to think what I should have done, and that I not only should have been able to refif them, but even should not have had presence of mind enough to do what I might have done; much lefs, what now, after fo much confideration and preparation, I might be able to do. Indeed, after feriously thinking of these things, I frequently became inelancholy, and fometimes it would last a great while; but at length, on due reflection, I changed my melancholy into thankfulnels to that Providence who had delivered me from fo many unfeen dangers, and had kept me from those milchiefs which I could no way have been the agent in delivering myfelf from; because I had not the least notion of any fuch thing depending, or the least suppoin-

This renewed a contemplation, which often had come to my thoughts at former times, when first I began to see the merciful dispositions of heaven in the dangers we meet within this life; how wonderfully we are delivered when we know nothing of it: that when we are in a quantary, (as we call it) a doubt or hesitation, whether to go this way or that way, a feeret hint shall direct us this way, when we intended to go that; nay, when sense, our own inclination, and perhaps business has called to go the other way, yet a strange impression upon the mind,

from

from we know not what power, shall over-rule us to go this way; and it shall afterwards appear, that had we gone that way which we would have gone, and even to our imagination ought to have gone, we should have been ruined and loft; upon these, and many like reflections, I afterwards made it a certain rule, that whenever I found those secret hints, or pressings of my mind, to do or not do any thing that preiented, or to go this way or that way, I never failed to obey the fecret dictate; though I knew no other reason for it, than that fuch a preffure, or fuch an hint, hung upon my mind. I could give many examples of the fuccess of this conduct in the course of my life; hut more especially in the latter part of my inhabiting this unhappy island; befides many occasions which it is very likely I might have taken notice of, if I had feen with the same eyes then that I faw with now: but it is never too late to be wife; and I cannot but recommend to all confidering men, whole lives are attended with fuch extraordinary incidents as mine, or even though not fo extraordinary, not to flight fuch fecret intimations of Providence, let them come from what invisible intelligence they may; that I shall not discuss, and perhaps cannot account for; but certainly they are proof of the converse of spirits, and a fecret communication between those embodied and those unembodied; and fuch a proof as cannot be withstood; of which I shall have occasion to give some very remarkable instances in the remainder of my solitary residence

I believe the reader will not think it strange, if I confess that these anxieties, these constant dangers I lived in, and the concern that was now upon me, put an end to all invention, and to all contrivances, that I had laid for my future accommodations and conveniences. I had the care of my safety more now upon my hands than that of my food. I was unwilling even to drive a nail, or chop a stick of wood, for fear the noise of strong and the same might be heard; much less would I size agun, for the same reason; and, above all, I was very uneasy

uneafy at making any fire, left the finoke, which is visible at a great distance in the day, should betray me; and for this reason I removed that part of my business which required fire, such as burning of pots and pipes, &c. into my new apartment in the wood; where, after I had been some time, I found, to my unspeakable confolation, a mere natural cave in the earth, which went in a vast way, and where, I dare say, no savage, had he been at the mouth of it, would be so hardy as to venture in; nor, indeed, would any man else, but one who, like me, wanted nothing so much as a safe retreat.

The mouth of this hollow was at the bottom of great rock, where, by mere accident, (I would fay if I did not fee an abundant reason to ascribe all fuch things now to Providence) I was cutting down fome thick branches of trees to make charcoal. This was a very essential article, and the method I took to make

it was as follows:

I was afraid of making a finoke about my habitation and yet I could not live there without baking my bread cooking my meat, &c. fo I contrived to burn fome wood as I had feen done in England under turf, till it became chark, or dry coal; and then putting the fire out, I preferved the coal to carry home, and perform the other fervices, which fire was wanting for at home, without

danger or imoke.

But this by the bye. While I was cutting down fone wood here, I perceived that behind a very thick branch of low brufin-wood, or under-wood, there was a kind of hollow place: I was curious to look into it; and getting, with difficulty, into the mouth of it, I found it was pretty large, that is to fay, fufficient for me to ftand upright in; and perhaps another with me; but I must confess to you, I made more haste out than I did in; when looking farther into the place, which was perfectly dark, I saw two broad shining eyes of some creature, whether devil or man, I knew not, which twinkled like two stars, the dim light from the cave's

cave's mouth shining directly in, and making the re-

However, after some pause, I recovered myself, and thought that he who was afraid to fee the devil was not fit to live twenty years in an island all alone, and that I dare believe, there was nothing in this cave more frightful than myfelf; upon this, affuming courage, I took up a large firebrand, and in I rushed again, with the flick flaming in my hand. I had not gone three fleps in, but I was almost as much frightened as I was before; for I heard a very loud figh, like that of a man in some pain; and it was followed by a broken noise, as if of words half expressed, and then a deep sigh again. I stepped back, and was indeed struck with such a surprize, that it put me into a cold fweat; and if I had had a hat on my head, I will not answer for it, that my hair might not have lifted it off. But still plucking up my fpirits as well as I could, and encouraging myfelf a little, with confidering that the power and presence of God was every where, and was able to protect me: upon this holding it up a little over my head, I faw lying on the ground a most monstrous frightful old he goat, just making his will, as we fay, gaiping for life, and dying indeed

I stirred him a little, to see if I could get him out; and he estayed to get up, but was not able to raise himfelf: and I thought with myself, he might e'en lie there; for if he had frightened me so, he would certainly fright any of the savages, if any of them should be so hardy

as to come in there while he had any life in him.

I was now recovered from my surprize, and began to look round, when I sound the cave was but very small; that is to say, it might be about twelve seet over, but in no manner of shape, either round or square, no hands having ever been employed in making it but those of mere nature. I observed also, that there was a place on one side of it that went in farther, but so low, that it required me to creep upon my hands and knees to get into Vol. I.

it; and whither it went I knew not; fo having no candle, I gave it over for some time, but resolved to come again the next day, provided with candles and a tinderbox, which I had made of the lock of one of the mus-

quets, with some wild-fire in the pan.

Accordingly, the next day I went provided with fix large candles of my own making, for I made very good candles now of goats tallow; and, going into this low place, I was obliged to creep upon all fours, as I have faid, almost ten yards; which, by the way, I thought was a venture bold enough; confidering, that I knew not how far it might go, or what was beyond it: when I was got through the strait, I found the roof tose higher up; I believe near twenty feet; but never was such a glorious sight seen in the island, I dare say, as it was, to look round the fides and roof of this vault or cave; the walls reflected an hundred thourand lights to me from my two candles; what it was in the rock, whether diamonds, or any other precious stones, or gold, which I rather supposed it to be, I knew not.

The place I was in was in a most delightful cavity or grotto of it's kind, as could be expected, though perfectly dark; the floor was dry and level, and had a for of small loose gravel upon it; so that there was no naufecus creature to be seen; neither was there any damp or wet on the fides of the roof; the only difficulty in it was the entrance, which, however, as it was a place of security, and such a retreat as I wanted, I thought that was a convenience; so that I was really rejoiced at the discovery, and resolved, without any delay, to bring some of those things which I was most anxious about to this place; particularly, I resolved to bring hither my magazine of paraler, and all my spare arms, viz. two showling-pieces, (for I had three in all) and three mulguets, (for of them I had eight in all.) so I kept at my castle only five, which shood ready mounted, like pieces of cannon, on my outer sence; and were ready allo to

Upon this occasion of removing my ammunition. I wa

obliged to open the barrel of powder which I took up out of the fea, and which had been wet; and I found that the water had penetrated about three or four inches into the powder on every fide, which, caking and growing hard, had preferved the infide like a kernel in a fhell; fo that I had near fixty pounds of very good powder in the centre of the cafk; and this was an agreeable discovery to me at that time; fo I carried all away thither, never keeping above two or three pounds of powder with me in my caftle, for fear of a furprize of any kind. I also carried thither all the lead I had left for bullets.

I fancied myfelf now like one of the ancient giants, which were faid to live in caves and holes in the rocks, where none could come at them; for I perfuaded myfelf while I was here, if five hundred fayages were to hunt me, they could never find me out, or if they did, they would

not venture to attack me here.

The old goat, which I found expiring, died in the mouth of the cave, the next day after I made this difcovery; and I found it much eafier to dig a great hole there, and throw him in and cover him with earth, than to drag him out; fo I interred him there, to prevent of-

fence to my nofe.

I was now in the twenty-third year of my refidence in this island, and was so naturalized to the place, and to the manner of living, that could I have but enjoyed the certainty that no favages would come to the place to difturb me, I could have been content to have capitulated for spending the rest of my time there, even to the last moment, till I had laid me down and died like the old goat in the cave: I had also arrived to some little divertions and amusements, which made the time pass more pleafantly with me a great deal than it did before; as, first, I had taught my Pol, as I noted before, to speak: and he did it so familiarly, and talked so articulately and plain, that it was very pleafant to me; and he lived with me no less than fix and twenty years; how long he might live afterwards, I knew not; though I know

I know they have a notion in the Brazils, that they live an hundred years; perhaps fome of my Pols may be alive there still, calling after " Poor Robinson Crusoe," to this day ; I wish no Englishman the ill-luck to come believe it was the devil. My dog was a very pleafant and loving companion to me for no less than fixteen years of my time, and then died of mere old age; as degree, that I was obliged to floot feveral of them at first, to keep them from devouring me and all I had; but at length, when the two old ones I brought with me were gone, and after fome time continually driving them from me, and letting them have no provision with me, vourites, which I kept tame, and whose young, when of my hand; and I had also more parrots, which talked presty well, and would all call "Robin Cruice," but none like my first; nor, indeed, did I take the pains with any of them that I had done with him: I had also several tame sea-fowls, whose names I knew not, which I caught upon the shore, and cut their wings; and the little flakes, which I had planted before my caftle-wall, being now grown up to a good thick grove, these sowls all lived among these low trees, and bred there, which was very agreeable to me; fo that I began to be very well contented with the life I led, if it might but have been fecured from the dread

But it was otherwise directed: and it may not be amiss for all people who read my story, to make this just observation from it; viz. how frequently, in the course of our lives, the evil, which in itself we seek most to shun, and which, when we are fallen into, is the most dreadful to us, is oftentimes the very means or door of our deliverance, by which alone we can be raised again from

the affliction we are fallen into. I could give many examples of this in the course of my life; but in nothing was it more particularly remarkable, than in the circumstances of my last years of folitary residence in

It was now the month of December, in my twentythird year; and this being the fouthern folftice, for winter I cannot call it, was the particular time of my harvest, and required my being pretty much abroad in the fields. Going out one morning pretty early, even before it was thorough day-light, I was furprized with feeing a light of some fire upon the shore, at a distance from me of about two miles, towards the end of the island, where I had observed some favages had been, as before; though not on the other fide; but, to my great affliction, it was on my fide of the ifland.

I was, indeed, terribly affrighted at the fight, and flopped fhort within my grove, not daring to go out, left I might be furprized; and yet I had no more peace within, from the apprehensions I had, that if there favages, in rambling over the island, should find my corn flanding, or cut, or any of my works and improvements, they would immediately conclude that there were people in the place, and would then never give over till they found me out. In this extremity I went back directly to my castle, and pulled up the ladder after me, having made all things without look as wild and natural as I could.

I then made preparations for putting myfelf in a pofture of defence; I loaded all my cannon, as I called them, that is to fay, my mulquets, which were mounted upon my new fortification, and all my piftols, and refolved to defend myfelf to the last effort; not forgetting ferioully to recommend myself to the Divine Protection, and earnestly to pray to God to deliver me out of the hands of the Barbarians: and in this posture I continued about two hours, when I began to be impatient for intelligence abroad, but I had no spies to fend out.

After fitting fome time longer, and musing what

I should do in this case, I was not able to bear sitting in ignorance longer; fo fetting up my ladder to the fide of the hill, where there was a flat place, and then pulling the ladder up after me, I fet it up again, and mounted to the top of the hill; and pulling out my perspective glass, which I had taken on purpose, I laid me down flat on my belly on the ground, and began to look for the place: I prejently found there were no less than nine naked favages fitting round a imall fire they had made; not to warm them, for they had no need of that, the weather being extreme hot; but, as I suppose, to dreis fome of their barbarous diet of human flesh, which they had brought with them, whether alive or dead I

They had two canoes with them, which they had hauled upon the thore; and, as it was then tide of ebb, they feemed to me to wait the return of the flood to go away again. It is not easy to imagine what confusion this fight put me into, especially seeing them come on my fide the island, and so near me too; but when I observed their coming must be always with the current of the ebb, I began afterwards to be more sedate in my mind, being fatisfied that I might go abroad with fafety, all the time of tide of flood, if they were not on thore before; and having made this observation, I went abroad about my harvest-work with the more compositive.

As I expected, so it proved; for as foon as the tide made to the westward, I saw them all take boat, and row (or paddle, as we call it) all away. I should have they went to dancing, and I could eafily differn their postures and gestures by my glasses: I could not perceive, by my nicest observations, but that they were starknaked, and had not the least covering upon them; but whether they were men or women, that I could not dif-

As from as I faw them shipped and gone, I took two gruns upon it y floulders, and two pittols at my girdle, and my great iwerd by my file without a feabbard; and

with all the speed I was able to make, I went away to the hill, where I had discovered the first appearance of all. As soon as I got thither, which was not less than two lours, (for I could not go fast, being so loaded with arms as I was) I perceived there had been three canoes more of savages on that place; and looking out farther, I saw they were all at sea together, making over for the main.

This was a dreadful fight to me, especially when, going down to the shore, I could see the marks of horror which the dismal work they had been about had left behind: viz. the blood, the bones, and part of the slesh of human bodies, eaten and devoured by those wretches with merriment and sport. I was so filled with indignation at the sight, that I began now to premeditate the destruction of the next I should see there, let them be

who or how many foever.

It feemed evident to me, that the vifits which they thus made to this ifland were not very frequent; for it was above fifteen months before any more of them were on fhore there again; that is to fay, I never faw them, or any footfleps or fignals of them, in all that time: for as to the ramy featons, they are then fure not to come abroad, at leaft not fo far; yet, all this while I lived uncomfortably, by reafen of the conftant apprehensions I was in of their coming upon me by surprize; from whence I observe, that the expectation of evil is more bitter than the suffering, especially if there is no room to shake off that expectation or those apprehensions.

During all this time, I was in the murdering humour; and took up most of my hours, which should have been better employed, in contriving how to circumvent and fall upon them the very next time I should see them; especially if they should be divided, as they were the last time, into two parties; nor did I consider at all, that if I killed one party, suppose ten or a dozen, I was still the next day, or week, or month, to kill another, and so another, even ad infinitum, till I should

be at length no less a murderer than they were in being

men-eaters, and perhaps much more fo.

I spent my days now in great perplexity and anxiety of mind, expecting I should, one day or other, fall into the hands of these merciless creatures; if F did at any time venture abroad, it was not without looking round me with the greatest care and caution imaginable; and now I found, to my great comfort, how happy it was that I had provided a tame slock or herd of goats; for I durst not, upon any account, fire my gun, especially near that side of the island where they usually came, lest I should alarm the savages; and if they had fled from me now, I was sure to have them come back again, with perhaps two or three hundred canoes with them in a few days, and then I knew what to expect.

However, I wore out a year and three months more, before I faw any more of the favages, and then I found them again, as I shall soon observe. It is true, they might have been there once or twice; but either they made no stay, or at least I did not hear them; but in the month of May, as near as I could calculate, and in my four and twentieth year, I had a very strange en-

counter with them, of which in its place.

The perturbation of my mind, during the last fifteen or fixteen months interval, was very great: I flept unquiet, dreamed always frightful dreams, and often ftarted out of my fleep in the night; in the day great troubles overwhelmed my mind; in the night I dreamed often of killing the favages, and the reafons why I might justify fitch conduct. But to wave all this for a time, it was in the midddle of May, on the 16th day, I think, as well as my poor wooden calender would reckon; for I marked all upon the post fill; I fay, it was on the 16th of May, that it blew a violent from of wind all day, with a great deal of lightning and thunder; and the whole of the night was truly difinal indeed. I know not what was the particular occasion of it, but as I was reading in the bible, and taken up

with ferious thoughts about my present condition, I was surprized with the noise of a gum, as I thought, fired at sea.

This was, to be fure, a furprize of a quite different nature from any I had met with before; for the notions this put into my thoughts were quite of another kind. I started up in the greatest haste imaginable; and in a trice clapped up my ladder to the middle place of the rock, and pulled it after me, and mounting it the second time, got to the top of the hill; that very moment a stash of fire made me listen for a second gun, which, accordingly, in about half a moment, I heard, and by the sound knew it was from that part of the sea where I was driven out with the current in my

boat.

I immediately confidered, that this must be some ship in diffress, and that they had some comrade, or some other ship in company, and fired these guns for signals of diffress, and to obtain help. I had, however, such presence of mind at that minute, as to think, that though I could not help them, it might be they could help me; fo I brought together all the dry wood I could get at hand, and making a very confiderable pile, I fet it on fire upon the hill; the wood was dry, and blazed freely; and though the wind blew very hard, yet it burnt fairly out, so that I was certain, if there was any fuch thing as a fhip, they must needs fee it, and no doubt they did; for as foon as ever my fire blazed up, I heard another gun, and after that feveral others, all from the same quarter. I plied my fire all night long, till day broke; and when it was broad day, and the air cleared up, I faw fomething at a great distance at fea, full east of the island, whether a fail, or an hull, I could not diffinguish, no not with my glaffes, the diftance was fo great, and the weather still fomething hazy

I looked frequently at it all that day, and foon perceived that it did not move; fo I prefently concluded, that it was a flip at anchor; and being eager, you may

be fure, to be fatisfied, I took my gun in my hand, and ran towards the fouth-east fide of the island, to the rocks, where I had been formerly carried away with the current; and getting up there, the weather by this time being perfectly clear, I could plainly see, to my great forrow, the wreck of a ship cast away in the night upon those concealed rocks which I found when I was out in my boat; and which rocks, as they checked the violence of the stream, and made a kind of counter-stream or eddy, were the occasion of my recovering then from the most desperate, hopeless condition that ever I had been in all my life.

Thus, what is one man's fafety, is another man's destruction; for it seems, these men, whoever they were being out of their knowledge, and the rocks being wholly under water, had been driven upon them in the night, the wind blowing hard at E. and E.N.E. Had they feen the island, as I necessarily suppose they did not, they must, as I thought, have endeavoured to have faved themselves on shore by the help of their boat; but their firing of their guns for help, especially when they faw, as I imagined, my fire, filled me with many thoughts. First, I imagined, that, upon seeing my light, they would have got into their boat, and have endeavoured to make the shore; but that the sea running very high, they might have been cast away; I then thought, that they might have loft their boat before, as might be the cafe many ways; as particularly by the breaking of the fea upon their ship, which many times obliges men to stave or take in pieces their boat, and fometimes to throw it overboard with their own hands: other times I imagined, they had fome other thip or thips in company, who, upon the figuals of dil trefs they had made, had taken them up, and carried them off: at other times, I fancied they were all gone off to fea in their boat, and being hurried away by the current that I had been formerly in, were carried out into the great ocean, where there was nothing but mifery and the prospect of death; and that perhaps they

might

might by this time think of starving, and of being in a

condition to eat one another.

As all these were but conjectures at best, so, in the condition I was in, I could do no more than look upon the misery of the poor men, and pity them; which had still this good effect on my side, that it gave me more and more cause to give thanks to God, who had so bappily and comfortably provided for me in my desolate condition; and that of two ships companies who were now cast away upon this part of the world, not one life should be spared but mine. I learned here again to observe, that it is very rare the providence of God casts us into any condition of life, so low, or any misery so great, but we may see something or other to be thankful for, and may find others in worle circumstances than ourselves.

Such certainly was the case with these men, of whom I could not so much as see room to suppose any of them were saved; nothing could make it reasonable so much as to expect that they did not all perish there, except the possibility only of their being taken up by another ship in company; and this was but mere possibility indeed; for I saw not the least signal or appearance of

any fuch thing

I cannot explain, by any possible energy of words, what a strange longing, or hankering of desire, I felt in my foul upon this light; breaking out sometimes thus, 'O that there had been but one or two, nay, or but 'one foul faved out of the ship, to have escaped to me, 'that I might but have had one companion, one feltlow-creature, to have spoken to me, and to have conversely with!' In all the time of my solitary life, I never felt so carrett, so strong a desire after the society of my sellow-creatures, or so deep a regret at the want

There are fome fecret moving fprings in the affections, which, when they are fet a going by fome object in view; or be it fome object though not in view, yet rendered prefent to the mind by the power of imagination,

that motion carries out the foul by its impetuolity to fuch violent, eager embracings of the object, that the

abience of it is insupportable.

Such were these carnest wishings, that but one man had been sayed! "O that it had been but one!" I believe I repeated the words, "O that it had been but one!" a thousand times; and my desires were so moved by it, that when I spoke the words, my hands would clenen together, and my singers press the palms of my hands, that if I had had any soft thing in my hand, it would have crushed it involuntarily; and my teeth my head would strike together, and set against one another so strong, that for some time I could not part them again.

Let the naturalists explain these things, and the reafon and manner of them; all I can say is, to describe the sast, which was ever surprizing to me when I some it, though I knew not from what it should proceed; it was doubtless the effects of ardent wishes, and of strong ideas formed in my mind, realizing the comfort which the conversation of one of my sellow-christians would

have been to me.

But it was not to be: either their fate or mine, of both, forbade it; for till the last year of my being of this island, I never knew whether any were faved out of that ship or no; and had only the affliction, fome day after, to see the corpse of a drowned boy come on shore at the end of the island, which was next the shipwreck. He had on no clothes, but a seaman's waistcook, a pair of open-kneed linen drawers, and a blue linen shint but nothing to direct me so much as to guess what nation he was of. He had nothing in his pocket but two pieces of eight, and a tobacco-pipe; the last was to me of to times more value than the first.

It was now calm, and I had a great mind to venture out in my beat to this week, not doubling but I might he find fomething on board, that might be useful to me but that did not altogether prefs me to much, as the possibility there might be yet fome living creature on board.

whole

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

whose life I might not only save, but by saving that life, completely own to the half degree. And this thought so impressed my heart, that I could not be quiet, night or day, but I must venture out in my boat on board this week; and committing the rest to God's providence. I thought the impression was so strong upon my mind that it could not be resisted, that it must come from some invisible direction, and that I should be wanting to

mylelf if I did not go.

Under the power of this impression, I hastened back to my caftle, prepared every thing for my voyage, took a quantity of bread, a great pot of fresh water, a compals to feer by, a bottle of rum, (for I had ftill a great deal of that lett a balket full of railins; and thus loading myfelf with every thing necessary, I went down to my boat, took the water out of her, and got her affoat, loaded all my targo in her, and then went home again for more; my second cargo was a great bag full of rice, the umbrella to fet up over my head for shade, another finall loaves, or barley-cakes, more than before, with a bottle of goat's milk, and a cheefe; all which, with great labour and fivent, I brought to my boat, and praying to God to direct my voyage, I put out, and rowing or paddling the cance along the shore, I came at last to the utmost point of the island, on that fide, viz. N. E. And now I was to hunch out into the ocean, and either to verture of notio venture; I looked on the rapid currents nembrance of the hazard I had been in before, and my last began to fail me; for I forefaw, that if I was a vafe way out to fea, and perhaps out of my reach, or fight of the island again; and that then, as my boat was

There thoughts to operated my mind, that I began to give over my enterprize, and having hauled my boat

Vol. I. S into

into a little creek on the shore, I stepped out, and fat me down upon a little fpot of rifing ground, very penfive and anxious, between fear and defire about my voyage; when, as I was muling, I could perceive that the tide was turned, and the flood came on, upon which my going was for fo many hours impracticable: upon this it presently occurred to me, that I should go up to the highest piece of ground I could find, and observe, if I could, how the fets of the tide or currents lay when the flood came in, that I might judge whether, if I was driven one way out, I might not expect to be driven another way home, with the fame rapidity of the currents. This thought was no fooner in my head, than I cast my eye upon a little hill which fufficiently overlooked the fea both ways, and whence I had a clear view of the currents, or fers of the tide, and which way I was to guide myfelf in my return. Here I found, that as the current of the ebb fet out close by the fouth point of the island, so the current of the flood set in close by the shore of the north-fide; and that I had nothing to do but to keep to the north of the island in my return, and I should do well enough.

Encouraged with this observation, I resolved the next morning to set out with the first of the tide; and repoling myself for that night in the cance, under the great watch-coat I mentioned, I launched out: I made first a little out to sea full north, till I began to feel the benefit of the current, which set eastward, and which carried no at a great rate, and yet did not so hurry me as the southern side of the current had done before, and so as to take from me all government of the boat; but having a strong stream of the boat; but having a strong stream of the work is than two hours I can directly for the wreck, and in less than two hours I can

up to it.

It was a difinal fight to look at; the flip, which of it's building was Spanish, stuck fast, jammed in between two rocks; all the stern and quarter of her was beaten to pieces with the sea; and as her forecastle, which shruck on the rocks, had run on with great violence, the

4

Main-maft and fore-maft were brought by the board, that is to fay, broken fhort off; but her bowfprit was found, and the head and bow appeared firm; when I came clofe to her, a dog appeared upon her; which, feeing me coming, yelped and cried, and as foon as I called him, jumped into the fea, to come to me; and I took him into the boat, but found him almost dead from hunger and thirst: I gave him a cake of my bread, and he eat like a rayenous wolf, that had been starving a fortnight in the show; I then gave the poor creature some fresh water, with which, if I would have let him, he would have burst himself.

After this I went on board : the first fight I met with was two men drowned in the cook-room, or forecastle of the ship, with their arms fast about one another. I concluded, as is indeed probable, that when the ship fruck, it being in a ftorm, the fea broke fo high, and fo continually over her, that the men were not able to bear it, and were ftrangled with the constant rushing in of the water, as much as if they had been under water; befides the dog, there was nothing left in the ship that had life, nor any goods that I could fee, but what were spoiled by the water: there were fome casks of liquor, whether wine or brandy I knew not, which lay lower in the hold, and which, the water being ebbed out, I could fee; but they were too large to meddle with. I faw feveral chefts, which I believed belonged to fome of the feamen, and I got two of them into the boat, without examining what was in them.

Had the stern of the ship been fixed, and the fore-part roken off, I am persuaded I might have made a good rage; for by what I found in these two chests, I had been to suppose the ship had a great deal of wealth on hand; and if I may gues by the course she she should from the Buenos Ayres, or the deal Plata, in the south part of America, beyond the Brazils, to the Havannah, in the Gulph of Mexico, and so perhaps to Spain: she had, no doubt, a great treasure in her, but of no use at that time to any body;

and what became of the rest of her people I then'

knew not.

I found, besides these chests, a little cask full of liquor, of about twenty gallons, which I got into my boat with much difficulty: there were several musquets in a cabin, and a great powder-horn, with about four pounds of powder in it; as for the musquets, I had no occasion for them, so I lest them, but took the powder-horn. I took a fire-shovel and tongs, which I wanted extremely; as also two little brass kettles, a copper-pot to make chocolate, and a gridiron; and with this cargo, and the dog, I came away, the tide beginning to make home again; and the same evening, about an hour within night, I reached the island again, weary and fa-

tigued to the last degree.

I reposed that night in the boat, and in the morning I resolved to harbour what I had gotten in my new cave, not to carry it home to my caftle; after refreshing myfelf, I got all my cargo on thore, and began to examine the particulars: the cask of liquor I found to be a kind of rum, but not fuch as we had at the Brazils; and, in a word, not at all good; but when I came to open the chefts, I found feveral things which I wanted: for example, I found in one a fine case of bottles of an extraordinary kind, and filled with cordial waters, fine, and very good; the bottles held about three pints each, and were tipped with filver. I found two pots of very good fuccades, or fweat-meats, to fastened also on the top, that the falt-water had not hurt them; and two me of the fame, which the water had fooiled. I found f good fhirts, which were very welcome to me, and a dozen and half of white linen handkerchiefs and loured neckcloths; the former were also very welcon being exceeding refreshing to wipe my face in a hot day befides this, when I came to the till in the chefts, I found there three great bags of pieces of eight, which held about eleven hundred pieces in all; and in one of them, wrapt up in a paper, fix doubloons of gold, and fome fmall bars or wedges of gold; I suppose they might all weigh near a pound.

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

The other chest I found had some clothes in it, but of little value; but by the circumftances it must have belonged to the gunner's mate; though there was no powder in it, but about two pounds of glazed powder in the three flafks, kept, I suppose, for charging their towling-pieces on occasion: upon the whole, I got very little by this voyage, that was of much use to me: for, as to the money, I had no manner of occasion for it; it was to me as the dirt under my feet; and I would have given it all for three or four pair of English shoes or flockings, which were things I greatly wanted, but had not had on my feet now for many years. I had, indeed, gotten two pair of shoes now, which I took off the feet of the two drowned men, whom I law in the wreck; and I found two pair more in one of the chefts, which were very welcome to me, but they were not like our English shoes, either for ease or service, being rather what we call pumps than floes. I found in this feaman's cheft about fifty pieces of eight in royals, but no gold. I supofe this belonged to a poorer man than the other, which feemed to belong to some officer.

Well, however, I lugged this money home to my cave, and laid it up, as I had done that before, which I brought from our own flip; but it was a great pity, as I faid, that the other part of the flip had not come to my flure; for I am fatisfied I might have loaded my cance feveral times over with money, which, if I had ever efcaped to England, would have lain here fafe enough

'ill I might have come again and fetched it.

Having now brought all my things on shore, and secured them, I went back to my boat, and rowed or paddled her along the shore to her old harbour, where I laid her up, and made the best of my way to my old habitation, where I found every thing safe and quiet; so I began to repose myself, live after my old sashion, and take care of my family affairs; and, for a while, I lived seasy enough; only that I was more vigitant shan I used to be, looked out oftener, and did not go abread so much; and if at any time I did stir with any freedom, it was al-

S ways

ways to the east part of the island, where I was pretty well fatisfied the favages never came, and where I could go without fo many precautions, and fuch a load of arms and ammunition as I always carried with me if I went

the other way.

I lived in this condition near two years more, during which time my head was filled with projects and deligns, how, if it were possible, I might get away from this ifland; fometimes I was for making another voyage to the wreck, though my reason told me there was nothing left worth the hazard of my voyage; fometimes for ramble one way, fometimes another; and I believe verily, if I had had the boat that I went from Sallee in, should have ventured to sea, bound any where, I knew not whither.

I have been, in all my circumstances, a memento t those who are touched with that general plague of man kind, whence, for aught I know, one half of their mile ries flow; I mean, that of not being fatisfied with the flo tion wherein God and nature hath placed them: for, no to look back upon my primitive condition, and the ex cellent advice of my father, the opposition to which was as I may call it, my original fin, my fubfequent miltake of the same kind have been the means of my coming into this miferable condition; for had that Providence, which so happily had feated me at the Brazils, as a planter, bleffed me with reasonable defires, and could I have been contented to have gone on gradually, I might have been by this time, I mean in the time of my being on this island, one of the most considerable planters in the Brazils; nay, I am perfuaded, that by the improvements had made in that little time I lived there, and the increase I should probably have made, if I had stayed, I might have been worth an hundred thousand moidores; and what bufiness had I to leave a settled fortune, well stocked plantation, improving and increasing, to turn supercargo to Guinea, to fetch Negroes, when patience and time would have fo increased our stock at home, that we could have bought them at our own doors, from those

ROBINSON CRUSOE.

whose business it was to fetch them? And though it had cost us something more, yet the difference of that price was by no means worth laying at io great a hazard.

But as this is ordinarily the fate of young heads, fo reflection upon the folly of it is as ordinarily the exercise of more years, or of the dear-bought experience of time; and so it was with me now; and yet so deep had the mistake taken root in my temper, that I could not fatisfy mylels in my station, but was continually poring upon the means and possibility of my escape from this place; and that I may, with the greater pleasure to the reader, bring on the remaining part of my story, it may not be improper to give some account of my first conceptions on the subject of this soolish scheme for my escape, and how and upon what soundation I acted.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

